

H.R. & M.M.
MARSHALL
EX LIBRIS





COLONEL SIR R. J. WALDIE-GRIFFITH, BART.,
Honorary Colonel, 4th Bn. The King's Own Scottish Borderers.

WAR RECORD

OF

4th Bn. King's Own Scottish Borderers

AND

Lothians and Border Horse

WITH HISTORY OF THE T.F. ASSOCIATIONS OF THE COUNTIES
OF ROXBURGH, BERWICK, AND SELKIRK

EDITED BY

W. SORLEY BROWN

(Lieutenant, 4th Bn. K.O.S.B.)

PUBLISHED ON BEHALF OF THE T.F. ASSOCIATIONS BY
JOHN McQUEEN & SON,
GALASHIELS.

1920.



WAR RECORD

In the year 1914-15

of the University of Cambridge

the following names were recorded

1914

1915

1916

1917

1918

1919

1920

1921

To the Memory

of those members of the 4th Bn. King's Own Scottish
Borderers and Lothians and Border Horse who laid
down their lives in the great war, 1914-1918.

Duice et decorum est pro patriâ mori.

PREFACE.

It was at an officers' conference held one evening in the year 1916, when the 4th Bn. K.O.S.B. was traversing the desert wastes of Sinai, that it was decided to collect material for the compilation of a record of the part the Battalion played in the Great War. Lieut.-Colonel G. T. B. Wilson, D.S.O., who was then in command of the Battalion, was very anxious that this should be done. Unfortunately the severe fighting in which the Battalion was subsequently engaged left little time and opportunity for much progress to be made with the Record, and, indeed, nothing further was done in the matter until last year, when the members of the Territorial Force Associations of the Counties of Roxburgh, Berwick, and Selkirk, at the instigation of Colonel Sir Richard Waldie-Griffith, decided that this little book, embodying the war record of the 4th Bn. K.O.S.B. and the Lothians and Border Horse, together with a short history of the Territorial Force Associations concerned, should be written and published. The task of writing and editing the volume was entrusted to the present writer. In carrying out that task I have received much valuable assistance from many brother officers, non-commissioned officers, and men. I desire especially to thank Colonel Sir Richard Waldie-Griffith for much kindly advice and help. His love and concern for the interests of the Battalion cannot be over-estimated, and as its Honorary Colonel he is regarded with the deepest and warmest affection by all who have had the honour to serve under his command.

I desire also to thank Captain J. R. Marshall, who is responsible for the portion of the volume relating to the Lothians and Border Horse; Lieut.-Colonel A. Haddon, O.B.E., for information about the Territorial Force Associations; the Officer in charge of Records, Hamilton; and Captain T. Broomfield and others who were kind enough to send me a large number of photographs, from which a selection has been made.

Every effort has been made to make the record as complete as possible. Mistakes may have crept in, and omissions will doubtless be noted, but I trust that with all its imperfections the book will serve its purpose as a small reminder of the honourable part the units concerned played in the Great War.

W. S. B.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER	PART I.—4TH BN. K.O.S.B. RECORD.	PAGE
I.	The Call to Arms	11
II.	Gallipoli—The 12th of July	17
III.	More about the 12th of July	27
IV.	Sunshine and Shadow	40
V.	The Last Week at Cape Helles	48
VI.	Memories of Lemnos	59
VII.	In Turkish Hands—A Prisoner of War's Story	65
VIII.	Cairo, Port Said, and Kantara	73
IX.	Romani, Rabah, Mohamidiya	82
X.	The Attack on Outpost Hill	89
XI.	The Fall of Gaza and the Battle of Mughar	103
XII.	The Crossing of the River Auja	111
XIII.	On the Western Front	121
XIV.	The Armistice and After	128
XV.	Casualties, Awards, and Roll of Honour	134
PART II.—LOTHIANS AND BORDER HORSE RECORD.		
I.	Mobilisation	153
II.	“A” Squadron	158
III.	Headquarters, “B” Squadron and Machine Gun Section	165
IV.	Do. (continued)	174
Y.	“D” Squadron	184
VI.	Casualties, Honours, and Awards	191
PART III.—HISTORY OF THE TERRITORIAL FORCE ASSOCIATIONS OF THE COUNTIES OF ROXBURGH, BERWICK, AND SELKIRK		
	... ..	201

Part I.

4th K.O.S.B. Record.

Part I

4th U.S. Army

CHAPTER I.

THE CALL TO ARMS.

The people of the Border country have good reason to remember as a red-letter day the 5th of August, 1914, as on that memorable day the 4th Bn. K.O.S.B. was mobilised, orders to mobilise having been received the previous evening. There was naturally much excitement and bustle at the various detachment headquarters, as the Battalion was thus for the first time placed on a war footing. Having congregated at Galashiels, the troops were billeted at the Battalion's headquarters in Paton Street, and in other buildings throughout the town, and after the necessary preliminaries had been arranged, involving the delay of a few days, orders were received that the Battalion was to move to Cambusbarron. By August 11th mobilisation was complete, and, thanks to the immediate enlistment of a good number of National Reservists, the Battalion was brought up to full strength. The Battalion was under the command of Lieut.-Colonel J. McNeile, with Major A. Stevenson as second in command, Captain J. C. Lang as adjutant, and Lieutenant E. H. Follis as quartermaster, while the medical officer was Captain D. R. Taylor, and the Rev. W. S. Matheson was chaplain. As Major (afterwards Lieut.-Colonel) Stevenson was medically rejected for active service, he was subsequently succeeded as second in command by Major W. E. A. Cochrane, Major Stevenson being posted to the Reserve Battalion. Speculation became rife, and Dame Rumour, always very influential in the Army, had some of her greatest triumphs. But doubt soon gave way to certainty, and on August 12th the Battalion entrained for Cambusbarron. The townspeople gave the Borderers an enthusiastic send-off, and after a railway journey of some hours—the first advance in “The Great Adventure”—Stirling was reached. Few who took part in the subsequent march to Hayford Mill, where the Battalion was

quartered, will ever forget it, and many a time and oft the depressing effect which the long straight Dumbarton Road had that day was recalled when, by frequent passage over it, our men got a better idea of the distance. But at last a turn off the main road was made, and there, sheltering between the Touch Hills and the King's Park, was the home of the Battalion for nine months. A large mill, at one time giving employment to some hundreds of hands, which, in consequence of trade depression, had a varied and chequered career, once more—in the service of the military and as a billet for troops—became a scene of life and energy and bustle. The first thing done was to get the "house in order," and several days of methodical work revolutionised the place from the point of view of comfort, though later in the year it underwent further improvements which raised it into high esteem as a comfortable billet.

Training commenced—the hard, rigorous, disciplined training rendered necessary by circumstances. Of all the training areas, perhaps the most famous was "Shielbrae," where the civilian soldiers of the old Territorial Force, reinforced by recruits whose patriotism brought them early to the Colours, learned many of the arts of war. The Battalion's first experience of "Shielbrae" was as the goal of a route march, when the hilly road up took all aback, and the troops were relieved when, after a halt, "About turn" was ordered. Rigorous training, however, had a wonderful effect, and within a few days the Battalion marched up that same road in full marching order, carried out strenuous training for some hours, and marched light-heartedly back to billets, none the worse for their exertions. The beautiful policies of Airthrey Castle, near Bridge of Allan, also afforded excellent opportunities for training, route marching being combined with field practice, and valuable experience was in this way gained. Later on, the old historic field of Bannockburn became the centre of many a hard-fought tactical scheme, where brigades were involved rather than battalions at the end of a hard and comprehensive scheme of training. Route marches were frequent, and

most of the country in the neighbourhood echoed to the beat of tramping feet and the swing of a soldier's chorus.

During the whole period much experience was gained by all ranks of garrison duties, and in supplying the guards, picquets, and fatigue parties necessary to facilitate operations in the busy military centre near which the Battalion was stationed. The relations of the Battalion with the villagers of Cambusbarron and the burghers of Stirling were noteworthy for their cordiality. On arrival, few men knew any of the local inhabitants, but the latter, by their kindness in keeping an open door to groups of soldiers, won their way completely to the hearts of the men, who, at the same time, by their frankness and good conduct, did much to earn for the Battalion a reputation second to none in the district—a reputation which even the period of the war did not diminish.

During the period of occupation of the mill at Cambusbarron by the 1/4th K.O.S.B., the 4th (Reserve) Battalion was formed at the headquarters in Galashiels under the command of Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith, with Major A. Stevenson as second in command, Captain (now Major) W. J. Mabbott as adjutant, Major J. Sanderson as quartermaster, and Major W. Doig as medical officer. The mansion of Galahill was secured as an officers' mess, and the recruits that flocked to the Battalion were billeted at the headquarters in Paton Street and the other parts of the town. Recruits came in in steady and increasing numbers—sturdy youths from all parts of the Borders—and training was carried out in the Public Park, in Gala Policies, on Ladhope Moor, and elsewhere in the district. Wonderful enthusiasm prevailed among officers and men, and the work of training was greatly facilitated by the fine, brisk weather which prevailed throughout the autumn and early winter. Memorable features of the training were the long route marches that were undertaken by selected officers and men for the purpose of stimulating recruiting. The first march was one “up Ettrick and down Yarrow”—a distance of over 40 miles—which was accomplished in

two October days. Some of the recruits who took part in this march had less than two months' training, but although they had practically no sleep overnight owing to the presence of large numbers of rats in the barn which was occupied as a billet, and an incident, involving the calling out of the guard, into the details of which I need not enter here, all completed the journey back to headquarters. Marches were also made through Roxburghshire and Berwickshire, and in every town and village through which the Battalion passed the troops were warmly and hospitably received by the inhabitants. Training was carried out on a carefully organised plan. In the later stages several sham fights took place, and one which the writer specially recalls was that against several battalions of the Black Watch which were stationed at Hawick. This fight took place on the hills near Selkirk amid torrents of rain, and all were drenched to the skin. After being passed efficient the first batch of recruits—thirty in number—were sent to join the 1/4th K.O.S.B. Those men were the cream of the reserve unit, and on their arrival at Cambusbarron they were accorded a great reception from all ranks. It should be stated here that the 1/4th K.O.S.B. volunteered almost to a man to go on foreign service, but when the medical test became more severe many were rejected as unfit for active service. These were ultimately transferred to the reserve Battalion and were replaced by fit volunteers, every effort being made to get the 1/4th K.O.S.B. up to full strength once more. On March 15th, 1915, the reserve Battalion was inspected at Galashiels by Lieut.-General Sir R. Pole-Carew, K.C.B., C.V.O., Inspector of the Territorial Force, who said, in the course of his address to the troops, "I do not think I have ever seen a better Border battalion."

In April, 1915, the reserve Battalion, which by this time was over a thousand strong, proceeded to Barry for musketry practice. After the musketry tests were completed orders were received that officers and men unfit for active service, or who had not volunteered for active service, were to be formed into the 12th Provisional

Home Service Battalion. This was done, and the 12th Provisional Battalion, under the command of Lieut.-Col. A. Stevenson, with Major Mabbott as second in command, at once proceeded to Portobello, and subsequently to North Queensferry, where the Battalion for twelve months did valuable work in garrisoning the Forth defences. The remainder of the 4th (Res.) K.O.S.B. became known as the 2/4th K.O.S.B., and left Barry for Rumbling Bridge, Major H. P. Cochrane being promoted second in command, and Captain A. L. Dickson being appointed adjutant. Here, amid beautiful scenery in the valley of the Devon, more arduous training was carried on. Meanwhile a third line unit known as the 3/4th K.O.S.B. was formed at Galashiels, and from the third line recruits after a spell of training were drafted to the 2/4th Battalion, which was very anxious to be made up to full strength and proceed on service overseas. This desire, however, was never gratified, though, after the heavy losses sustained by the 1/4th K.O.S.B. at Gallipoli on the 12th of July, most of the subalterns of the second line Battalion were sent out to fill the gaps. After proceeding to Hawick in October, 1915, the Battalion was amalgamated with the 2/5th K.O.S.B. (less a proportion of officers and men who were returned to 3/4th Battalion), which was subsequently stationed at Chelmsford and then sent to the Curragh. The 3/4th K.O.S.B. at Galashiels, however, continued to enlist recruits, and from this unit, officers, N.C.O.'s and men were drafted at various times to the 1/4th K.O.S.B. after it had gone overseas. The third line was afterwards stationed at Stobs, Catterick Bridge, Hawick, and Dunfermline, and from all those places reinforcements were sent to the 1/4th K.O.S.B. and to other units of the regiment. At Galashiels the 3/4th K.O.S.B. (latterly re-named the 4th (Res.) K.O.S.B.) was commanded by Major J. Sanderson; at Stobs by Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith, who ultimately saw service in France; at Catterick Bridge and Hawick by Lieut.-Colonel W. J. Millar, D.S.O., who was in command of the 1/5th K.O.S.B. at Gallipoli and in the Sinai Peninsula; and at Dunfermline by Lieut.-

Colonel Millar, Major J. Sanderson (temporarily), Lieut.-Colonel C. A. G. O. Murray, D.S.O., and Major H. W. Locke, successively, the last named being in command when the unit was disembodied in mid-summer, 1919. When the 3/4th K.O.S.B. left Galashiels for Stobs in 1916, the headquarters of the Battalion became known, first, as the Administrative Centre, 4th K.O.S.B., and afterwards as the 150 T.F. Depot, Captain A. T. Roberts, Lieut. J. Ross, and Lieut. W. S. Brown being successively in charge. At the depot practically all the 4th K.O.S.B. recruits were clothed and equipped before being despatched to the reserve unit for training. The depot was also recognised as the connecting link between the T.F. Association, the Record Office at Hamilton, and the Battalions at home and abroad. From the depot hundreds of casualties admitted to hospitals in this country from overseas received their rejoining instructions after discharge from hospital. The depot also performed other useful functions. Time and again it was the place of rest for stranded soldiers, and the many other duties carried out by the officer and staff in charge included the settling up of difficulties of soldiers of all regiments who had grievances to complain of, extending leave in urgent cases, arranging military funerals, writing letters on behalf of soldiers' dependants, assisting men with advice on demobilisation, taking charge of stores and documents, dealing with much correspondence and other matters too numerous to mention.

s
y
e
ll
g
g
n
es
d



OFFICERS OF THE 24th Bn., K.O.S.B. (MAY, 1915).

BACK ROW—2nd Lt. H. J. Armstrong, 2nd Lt. W. Brown, 2nd Lt. J. A. G. Cairns, SECOND ROW—2nd Lt. J. M. Pollock, 2nd Lt. J. M. Watson, 2nd Lt. A. P. Nimmo,
 2nd Lt. J. H. Stenhouse, 1st Lt. T. Muir, 2nd Lt. C. Alexander, 2nd Lt. J. Dunn, 2nd Lt. W. Sorley Brown, 2nd Lt. N. G. Grieve, 2nd Lt. J. Allan, 2nd Lt. J. Ross,
 2nd Lt. P. Livingston, 2nd Lt. R. B. Andersson, FRONT ROW—2nd Lt. J. McKay, Capt. A. L. Dickson, Hon. Major and Qr-Master J. Sanderson, Capt. H. P. Cochrane,
 2nd Lt. J. A. G. Cairns, 2nd Lt. W. Brown, 2nd Lt. J. M. Pollock, 2nd Lt. J. M. Watson, 2nd Lt. A. P. Nimmo, 2nd Lt. J. H. Stenhouse, 1st Lt. T. Muir, 2nd Lt. C. Alexander, 2nd Lt. J. Dunn, 2nd Lt. W. Sorley Brown, 2nd Lt. N. G. Grieve, 2nd Lt. J. Allan, 2nd Lt. J. Ross,
 2nd Lt. P. Livingston, 2nd Lt. R. B. Andersson, 2nd Lt. J. McKay, Capt. A. L. Dickson, Hon. Major and Qr-Master J. Sanderson, Capt. H. P. Cochrane.

CHAPTER II.

GALLIPOLI—THE 12TH OF JULY.

On January 21st, 1915, orders were received that the 1/4th K.O.S.B. had been selected to go on foreign service. Several memorable "alarms" were given and carried out, in one case at least to such an extent that it was firmly believed by all ranks that the day of farewell to Cambusbarron had arrived, but it turned out not to be so, and when real orders did come, the Battalion was unfortunate in that an outbreak of measles prevented its departure for France, and the 6th Bn. Scottish Rifles was ordered abroad in place of the Borderers. At last, on May 19th, the orders to move were given, and the Battalion marched through crowded streets to Stirling railway station, to entrain for the purpose of following the remainder of the South Scottish Brigade to the port of embarkation, but for some reason unknown at the time the orders were once again cancelled, and seldom has a battalion looked or felt so disappointed as ours as it marched back again through Stirling to the old mill, where two wretched days were spent. However, once more orders to move came, and on May 21st right heartedly, but very cautiously, the troops marched to the station and entrained for Liverpool, the send-off accorded to them being enthusiastic and sincere. Amid cheers the train departed, and on May 23rd the Battalion embarked for Gallipoli on H.M.T.S. "Empress of Britain." On the same transport was all that was left of the 1/7th Royal Scots, who but a few hours after our departure from Stirling met with a serious accident *en route* at Gretna. Also on board the "Empress of Britain" were the 4th Bn. Royal Scots, the 8th Bn. Scottish Rifles, and Major-General Egerton, Officer Commanding the 52nd Division, and staff. All told, there would be 4500 troops on

the ship. The transport left Liverpool amid scenes of great enthusiasm, and thus did Cambusbarron prepare the Border men for their strenuous work on the ill-fated Gallipoli Peninsula, where so many fine lads offered the supreme sacrifice for their King and Country, meeting as if on manoeuvre at Cambusbarron all the hardship, horror, and danger of war.

The sail proved a pleasant one except for the intense heat, and on June 4th the Battalion disembarked and entrained for Aboukir, where camp was pitched on the sea shore. No transport was available, and the work of carrying base baggage, ammunition and stores over the heavy sand proved no light task. On June 9th the Battalion entrained for Alexandria, and left there two days later on board the "Empress of Britain" for Mudros Bay, off the coast of Lemnos, and while lying at anchor the ship was bombed from a Turkish aeroplane. Little time was lost, and on June 13th the Battalion was packed into two small steamers and proceeded direct to the Gallipoli Peninsula, situated about 60 miles away. The Battalion disembarked in the grey dawn of the following morning at the south point of the Peninsula, the famous "River Clyde" being used as a gangway, and marched one and a half miles to the bivouac of the 155th Brigade. The Battalion received its baptism of fire *en route*, but suffered no casualties. No intimation of the arrival of the Battalion had been sent, and as tools were totally insufficient in numbers, only one company could be dug-in that day, the remainder occupying dug-outs of the rest of the Brigade. Further, owing to the lighters in which the Battalion landed on the Peninsula having orders to carry nothing but troops, most of the Battalion's stores and equipment had to be left on the ship. By June 15th, however, the Battalion was dug-in. The dug-outs were in full view of the Turks, who shelled our position frequently. Fairly good supplies of bully beef, biscuits, and onions were issued as rations, two onions per man being the allowance for the mid-day meal for several weeks, but there was no means of purifying the water, which was not good. For several weeks the

Battalion was engaged on constant heavy fatigues, and by June 18th the casualties were one officer (Captain, afterwards Major, Jobson) wounded, and one man killed and 16 men wounded. On June 22nd the Battalion moved up into the trenches for a spell of five days. While in the trenches there were 14 more casualties, of whom three were killed. Including sick, the total casualties at this period were slightly over 50. On July 11th, after having a short rest, the Battalion moved up into the firing line trenches, preparatory to an attack, orders having been received to attack three lines of Turkish trenches at 7.35 the following morning, the instructions being to pass over the first and second line and occupy and consolidate the third line. The Battalion was selected to lead the attack, and all took part in it with the exception of the junior captain and junior subaltern and twenty men of each of the four companies, who were sent back to form part of the Divisional Reserve. A great bombardment by our artillery on the Turkish trenches at 6.55 on the morning of the fatal 12th—a gloriously fine summer day—signified that the battle had begun, and the Battalion eagerly awaited the order to advance. At 7.35 a.m. the range of our artillery was lengthened, and the Battalion moved to the attack, passed over the first and second trenches, and continued advancing with the object of occupying the third trench. Not a man faltered, and it has been well and truly said that no finer charge was ever made on any field of battle. After advancing a distance of some 400 to 500 yards, Colonel McNeile, who was at the front leading the Battalion, said to Major Cochrane:—"We are too far forward, we must get back." The fact is that the Battalion got within the zone of our own artillery fire. Major Cochrane replied:—"I'll stop the men and get them back," and this he endeavoured to do. No third trench was seen during the advance or when going back. Casualties were not very heavy during the advance, but when retiring the Battalion had to pass through the zone of fire of our own artillery, also the fire from the enemy's artillery and machine gun and rifle fire, and this circumstance caused very heavy losses.

The Battalion, or what remained of it, then occupied part of the second Turkish trench, which was consolidated. I give herewith an account of the charge written for this record by Captain (afterwards Major) W. T. Forrest, who was subsequently killed in Palestine. Captain Forrest writes:—

“ It is with sadness one takes up the pen to put on record the deeds of the Battalion on and around the 12th of July, 1915, when so many good officers, N.C.O.’s, and men laid down their lives. However, it is their just due that these deeds should be put on record, so that future generations may know what Border men were able and willing to do in the interests of King and Country.

“ The Battalion was ordered to take its place in the firing line on the afternoon of the 11th. Careful preparations were made for the attack next morning. ‘ A ’ Coy. was on the right, resting on an old Turkish telegraph line; ‘ B ’ Coy. was next on the left, with two platoons of ‘ D ’ Coy.; ‘ C ’ Coy. was in second wave on the right; while ‘ D ’ Coy., less two platoons, was in second wave on the left. The orders were simple, viz.: — ‘ Carry the first two trenches but do not occupy them, the objective being the third Turkish trench.’ Right gallantly did the Battalion carry out its mission. At a given signal, when the artillery increased the range by 300 yards, every officer, N.C.O., and man went over the parapet except a few who had already been killed or wounded by the Turkish counter bombardment. The first trench was reached with comparatively few casualties, as was the second, some prisoners being sent back from both. The Battalion kept steadily on until it was seen that there was no third trench to take and occupy. They were through the Turkish defences, but were much too small a body to remain out in the open.

“ The commanding officer, second in command, and adjutant, held a consultation, and orders were issued to get back and occupy the second trench, which had been passed over, and it was during this time that so many casualties occurred. The front which had been broken was narrow, and the Turkish machine guns on the right

and left were by this time in position to enfilade the returning men. The survivors found their sister battalion, the 1/5th K.O.S.B., in possession, busy consolidating. Every available man turned his hand to this most necessary work, and by nightfall the new firing line was firmly established, with machine guns in position.

“ During the attack ten per cent. of the officers and men who had been kept as Divisional Reserve in the support lines had been anxiously waiting for news, and towards evening permission was asked to take food and water up to the new firing line. One officer and twenty men made up the party, which was loaded up with empty tin biscuit boxes full of water, bully beef, and jam. Words can hardly describe the journey from the dump to the firing line. The time of starting would be about 7 p.m. Progress was painfully slow. Every few minutes there was a halt to allow wounded, walking or on stretchers, to pass. Ration and ammunition parties were frequently met, and although the distance to the original firing line was only about two miles, the party did not arrive there until one o'clock the following morning. There one might almost say the real difficulties started, as the road to the first Turkish trench was in the making. The term 'road' in this case is rather misleading, as it consisted of a zig-zag sap not more than 24 inches wide, varying in depth from 2 to 5 feet. In this narrow sap a fatigue party of about 40 men was working, and the difficulty experienced in getting a party loaded up with food and water along such a trench can be readily imagined. Practically the whole time machine-gun and rifle fire was being kept up by the Turks, making it quite an exciting job. The sap itself was about 200 yards long, at the end of which it was found there were still some forty yards of open ground to cross. This was covered at a smart jog trot, and all dropped safely into what had been a Turkish trench the night before. The hour was 3 a.m. It was still dark, and nothing could be seen at first, but never will any man of that party forget the scene as dawn slowly broke in the east behind the trenches still held by the Turks. The officer of the party was at once

ordered to take charge of a part of the firing line which was very short of officers, while the remainder of the party was split up, and each tried to find the Battalion. Alas! it was soon apparent that the rumour which had been filtering through during the previous day must be true, as only here and there could an occasional 4th K.O.S.B. man be found, and at no place were there more than two together. All units of the 155th Brigade were fearfully mixed up. The only thing that could be done was to issue the food and water for the benefit of all and sundry, and sorely were the food and water, especially the latter, needed. One thing will never be forgotten by the writer. If word came along for 'water for the wounded,' a water bottle would pass through a hundred hands, and be the man ever so thirsty not a sign of hesitation could be seen in passing the water along.

"About the hour when it is difficult to say whether it is still dark or daylight, word was received that the Turks were going to counter attack. 'Stand to' was passed along the line, but it was quite unnecessary, as every man had been on his fire-step an hour before, and when dawn broke there was revealed one of the strangest scenes ever witnessed by the writer. Suddenly, about 100 Turks appeared from behind a small ridge. They were charging in a half-left direction, and they simply disappeared when our machine guns and rifles opened fire. Not a man of them got back. After that there was a lull, and then bayonets were again seen moving along the Turkish trench. The Turks evidently had a communication trench somewhere near the barricade, and having filled up the trench, they once more came on. Never was there a more halting, hesitating advance. They proceeded about ten yards and stopped. Then they moved forward a few more halting, hesitating steps, each with one of his hands held in front of his eyes. Apparently this exasperated one of their officers, as he was seen to take his rifle and club a man behind, which one can only imagine roused another man to make some remark, as the officer in question immediately turned round and shot him.

“ This was the signal for a general retreat of the Turks, and every gun and rifle opened fire. One would naturally ask why we hadn't been firing all the time. The only explanation seems to be that the Turks, by holding their hands in front of their eyes, gave the impression that they intended to surrender. Certainly the word was passed from mouth to mouth—‘ Don't fire; they are going to surrender.’ How many got back on this occasion it is difficult to say, but certainly not many. That finished the Turkish counter attacks.

“ As the sun rose higher a curious feature was observed. Apparently the Turks thought we were going to attack again, for suddenly about twenty bayonets were pushed above the level of, and in the direction of, the barricade. Our men accordingly did the same, and there the bayonets remained for about ten minutes, with the sun shining on the polished steel, but after being satisfied that nothing further was going to happen, the enemy gradually withdrew their bayonets.”

The following account of the charge is given by Corporal T. Richardson, No. 14 Platoon, D Coy. :—

“ On the morning of the attack, Nos. 13 and 14 Platoons were on the extreme left of the Battalion—the right of No. 14 resting on the head of the communication trench. At the head of this communication trench a bombing sap ran out a few yards towards the first Turkish trench, and was held by a party of our bombers. Directly opposite the centre of No. 13 Platoon a Turkish communication trench could be seen running into their firing line, and the junction was screened by a small tree. The first Turkish trench appeared to be about 50 yards from our firing line. Our orders were that on getting over the parapet No. 13 Platoon on reaching the tree was to do a left wheel, take and hold the near end of the communication trench, while No. 14 was to right incline and hold the top end next the second Turkish trench. This second Turkish trench appeared to be about 250 yards behind the first trench. No. 13 Platoon had a straight run forward, while No. 14 had to do a wheel right round.

“ On getting the order to go, we all scrambled over the parapet, and on running a few yards found ourselves in dead ground. We doubled forward, and on reaching the crest of the ridge, were met by very heavy artillery fire, and we had many casualties. It was here that Lieut. Henderson fell, shot through the head. We went on to the first enemy trench, and jumped over it and made for the second trench. By this time we had got so far to the right that we never saw the communication trench, and practically the whole of No. 14 Platoon went straight on, as well as a number of No. 13. On reaching the second trench, some jumped in, while others lay on the parapet and fired into the trench. A number of Turks were showing fight, and were firing their rifles through the loop-holes. I saw a great many dead and wounded Turks lying in this trench.

“ Just at this time Captain Lang, the adjutant, came over to this part of the line, and, telling us to get over the trench, pointed in a half-right direction, where, about 150 yards away, we could see the parapet of what looked like another trench. Accordingly, we doubled across in that direction, and on getting up to this third trench we found it to be untenanted and only a couple of feet deep. However, it afforded us some cover, and in we scrambled—the order immediately coming along for every man to fill his two sand bags and build up the parapet. The ground was like flint, and we could make little headway with our entrenching tools.

“ To the left from where I found myself, this shallow trench ran up towards a wood, and stopped about 100 yards short of it. To the right the trench ran in the direction of another wood. In both these woods a number of men were running about, but whether friend or foe I did not know. There seemed to be a great deal of rifle and machine gun fire coming in our direction from this wood on the right, and we felt our present position by no means comfortable. In front of us, however, there appeared to be no enemy at all. We were lying absolutely packed in this trench, and after about half-an-hour, during which time we suffered numerous casual-



Bivouacs in Kirithia Nullah, Gallipoli, near "Clapham Junction."

ties, word was passed along for the men on the left to extend towards the wood. As I was pretty well on the left, I got out and doubled across the open until I came to a very comfortable-looking shell-hole, into which I very contentedly jumped. Very shortly after reaching this haven I heard shouts of 'Retire ! Retire !' and on looking over towards the shallow dummy trench I saw our men getting up and retiring on the second Turkish trench, so I scrambled out and got into another shell-hole just in the rear of the dummy trench, along with an officer of the 5th K.O.S.B. Whilst lying in this hole I saw Lieut. Patrick and about eight men come out of the wood on the left and double across to the dummy trench. They ran past in front of our shell-hole, and I shouted out, but nobody seemed to hear. Two of the party got hit before they reached the trench—one of them a man named Anderson from Jedburgh, who belonged to 'A' Coy., was hit in the arm just as he was passing, and he fell right into our shell-hole. I bandaged the wound, and while doing so a Turk came running over from the direction of the wood and gave himself up. I searched him to see if he had any arms. This Turk himself took Anderson back to the second trench.

"By this time everybody appeared to have retired from the dummy trench, so the 5th K.O.S.B. officer and myself agreed to make a dash back. I got back safely, crawling most of the way, as a shell burst very close just as I was leaving, and I found I had lost the power of one of my legs. When I got back to the second Turkish trench I found only three other men of our Battalion beside me—Brown, Fletcher, and McGhie. The rest of the trench appeared to be manned by R.S.F. and 5th K.O.S.B. men.

"We spent all that afternoon building up the parapet, which had been practically blown away. At one part the foot of the trench was level with the ground in front. We also cleared the trench as far as possible by getting the dead over the parapet. They were nearly all Turks. The words were continually coming along the firing line all afternoon—'Turks massing in front,'

or 'Turks massing on right,' etc., but nothing ever came in the way of a counter attack. We could see the enemy running about on the ridge beyond the dummy trench, and they offered us splendid targets. When darkness began to come down the order was passed along for every man to 'Stand to the parapet all night.' "

CHAPTER III.

MORE ABOUT THE 12TH OF JULY.

The following graphic account is supplied by an officer of the Battalion who was attached to the Divisional Reserve on the 12th of July, 1915. He writes:—

“ Early in the afternoon of the 11th orders came in from Brigade Headquarters that ten per cent. of the Battalion were to go back to the Eski Line as Divisional Reserve. The junior captain and junior subaltern from each company were detailed for this duty, along with about eighty men, chosen mostly from the sick and those temporarily unfit. No appeals were listened to, so about four o'clock, after an ‘ au revoir ’ and ‘ good luck ’ to those remaining, we struggled along ‘ Parsons Road ’ and trudged down ‘ Oxford Street ’ to the Eski Line to a point just in front of the Backhouse Post, where everyone turned in for the night—all of us very sore and disappointed men.

“ At daybreak on the 12th we were startled by a terrific bombardment from batteries with which we appeared to be surrounded, and almost at the same moment a heavy rifle fire could be heard on our left—somewhere in the direction of the Krithia Nullah. Orders came in shortly afterwards that the reserves were to move out of the Eski Line to a position on the left of the small Nullah, just behind Backhouse Post. There we settled down to anxiously await news of the Battalion.

“ Shortly after eight o'clock the first of the wounded commenced to come down, an early arrival being Captain C. E. Macdonald, who had been shot through the hand. Most of these men had been wounded whilst getting out of the trench, or very shortly after leaving it, and little information could be got from them as to

how the attack had gone. From that time onwards a constant stream of 'walking cases' passed us *en route* for the dressing stations on the opposite side of the Nullah. All these men were given a much-needed drink by some artillery men who had their headquarters near the Nullah. Practically no information could be got about the Battalion except that the men of the batteries supporting our attack informed us that they were lengthening and shortening their range alternately, whatever that meant. Right up until 9 o'clock the artillery kept up an incessant bombardment. Then their fire began to gradually diminish until about 1 p.m., when another deafening bombardment began. Some of our officers at this time climbed up on to the ridge on our left, and from a French artillery observation station watched the attack of the 157th Brigade on our Battalion's immediate left. The tin discs on the back of each man could be plainly seen, glittering in the sun. At first the attack appeared to fall back a little, then go right ahead again. The position of our own Battalion could not be seen from this ridge owing to the rising ground. During the morning our position behind the Eski Line had been treated to occasional salvos from the Turkish artillery, but our casualties were slight—one man killed and six wounded. We had now been reinforced by all the available men sent up from the Rest Camp as well as some wounded men who had come in from the front. About a score of these men were obviously unfit for further service, and a chit from the Medical Officer of a neighbouring unit enabled us to send them back to the Rest Camp.

"About four o'clock in the afternoon an order came in from Divisional Headquarters ordering an officer and all available men from the Battalion Reserve to report at Brigade Headquarters, which were then situated in 'Oxford Road' between 'Piccadilly Circus' and 'Parsons Road.' Lieut. Fairgrieve was detailed to collect the men and report accordingly. It took this party, consisting of 49 all ranks, over an hour to reach the Brigade Headquarters owing to the continuous cry,

'Clear trench for stretchers.' The scenes outside the dressing stations in the Nullah leading to 'Oxford Street' were beyond description. Around each station were rows upon rows of stretchers—each containing what had been or, rather, what remained of a human being. The slightly wounded were waiting in long queues for treatment. What impressed one was the absolute deathly silence which prevailed over each station—not a word or a groan to be heard. We could find none of our own men among these cases, which probably had all come in from the later attack of the 157th Brigade. On arrival at Brigade Headquarters about 7 o'clock the Brigadier gave orders for the party to be issued with picks and shovels, and sent for Major Spence of the Royal Engineers. Brigade Headquarters could give us no news of the Battalion, as all communication seemed to have been cut.

"Major Spence gave orders that we were to proceed to 'Parsons Road' and there carry on digging at two saps from that trench up to the first Turkish trench, which we then heard for the first time had been captured. The saps had been started shortly after the attack, but both working parties had been annihilated by enemy shrapnel, which was decidedly cheering news for us! On arrival at the head of 'Oxford Street' we were told that one sap was along to the right and the other to the left. Our party was then split into two, the one lot going to the left sap, where it was found that Sergt.-Major Pirie of the Fusiliers had already a party at work, and the other to the right. Neither sap had proceeded more than 30 or 40 yards, and at no place was either sap deeper than a couple of feet. The orders were that the sap must be cut through before daylight, otherwise no food or water could be got up to the men in front. Leaving half our party under Sergeant-Major Pirie, Lieut. Fairgrieve commenced work on the right sap. At that time the sap went straight forward for 40 or 50 yards, then struck sharply off to the right. After some hours of strenuous toil, Lieut. Fairgrieve got forward into the Turkish trench and was told by an R.E. officer there that

Pirie's party were through, having had a much shorter road to cut. With the aid of this officer the correct line of our sap was marked out and the work carried on with feverish haste.

"Flares of all kinds were lighting the whole place every few minutes, and work had to proceed with the greatest caution, as a machine gun was at once turned on our party. As each flare went up every man 'clapped,' and owing to the fact that the ground was absolutely strewn with corpses we were not spotted. During the night our Machine Gun Officer passed us with some of his section, carrying ammunition, and, shortly after, some of our signallers, bent on repairing wires. We then knew that our men were in front.

"By this time every man was becoming absolutely exhausted with the incessant digging, and whenever a man's spell of picking or shovelling was over he was practically asleep before he sat down. This necessitated a constant awakening. On being awakened each man sprang up and bravely buckled to. Every credit is due to these men for the work done that night, as no man had tasted food since the previous day at dinner.

"Between 1 and 2 o'clock in the morning (13th July) we heard a sudden crackle of heavy rifle fire in the trenches in front. This proved to be a small counter attack by the Turks, so we downed tools and seized our rifles. Our artillery, however, appeared to have the matter in hand and the attack fizzled out. So once again we resumed our work and carried on until about an hour before daylight.

"At 4 o'clock, just as the first streaks of dawn were appearing over the Narrows, we were once more startled by a heavy burst of firing and loud cries of "Allah! Allah!" from the advancing Turks. This proved to be a more formidable attack, and Lieut.-Colonel Pollok McCall, who had charge of 'Parsons Road,' ordered our party, along with some Scots Fusiliers, to get over the parapet and make for a part of the trench to our left front, from which reinforce signals had been sent up. The intervening space was covered

successfully without a casualty. After jumping into the trench we looked round to see if we had come in among our own men, and there saw one of our Machine Gun Sections under Sergeant Jardine. The trench was literally filled with dead and wounded from practically every unit in the 52nd Division. Whilst looking for more of our men, Lieut. Fairgrieve ran into Captain Forrest, who had come up with food and water the previous night, and was now endeavouring to find some of our men.

“To our left the trench appeared to be the firing line, and at the spot where we were to serve as a second line, a Turkish communication trench ran up from the centre to the second captured Turkish trench. On proceeding up the communication trench Lieut. A. Galloway was found with a handful of our men at the left end of the second captured trench, just at the head of the communication trench. He and his men were absolutely exhausted, and could give us no information as to where the rest of the Battalion were.

“On returning to the first trench we found that Captain Forrest, who had taken charge, was endeavouring to clear the trench and build up the parapet, which had been blown to pieces by shell fire, and the trench itself resembled a shambles. We set to work to bury the dead, and get the wounded out. One of the first to be buried was Lieut. J. B. Innes of our Battalion. Just about this time our Machine Gun officer, Lieut. W. K. Innes, appeared—shot through the neck—and he had to be sent off to the dressing station.

“At 9 o'clock word came in from the Engineers that we were to carry on with the digging, as in some parts the saps we had dug during the night were still very shallow. Our men by this time had got well scattered, and it was with difficulty that about twenty men were collected and digging resumed from the deep end of the sap. We carried on until relieved by a party of Fusiliers about mid-day, when we ‘handed over’ and filed back to our dump at Brown House with orders from Captain Forrest to bring up the Battalion rations to the firing line that night. Finding out there that the rations

would not be up until 8 p.m. we went right on to our old position at Backhouse Post. On the road down Lieut. Fairgrieve was called in to Divisional Headquarters to report to General Egerton as to the whereabouts of the Battalion, and why Colonel McNeile or the Adjutant hadn't got in touch with Brigade Headquarters. Lieut. Fairgrieve replied that, so far as he could discover, both the Colonel and the Adjutant had been killed.

“ On reaching Backhouse Post we turned in for a much needed rest, before setting off to carry up the rations. By 8 o'clock we were back at Brown House, the party consisting of one officer and 19 men. There each man saddled himself with as much bully beef, biscuits, water, and firewood as he could possibly carry, and we started off for the firing line about 9 p.m. On entering 'Oxford Street' we got hopelessly entangled with two battalions of the Royal Naval Division, who were proceeding up all communication trenches in the vicinity to consolidate the ground taken by our Battalion the day before, and to take that fatal 'third' trench. With the greatest difficulty we wriggled and struggled through and ultimately reached our forward dump in 'Parsons Road' at the top of 'Regent Street' at 2.30 a.m. Sergt. Jardine took over the stores, and C.Q.M.S. Macpherson returned with the ration party to Backhouse Post.”

In the course of a letter written to a friend on the day previous to the attack on the 12th, Colonel McNeile, writing of the losses in the Division which had already occurred, said—

“ We are to take the front part in an attack shortly, but I hope it will not prove so costly.”

The gallant Colonel's hope that better luck would favour the Borderers, however, was not realised, as the casualty lists compiled on July 16th up to that date showed how severely the 1/4th K.O.S.B. had suffered. The casualties in killed, wounded, and missing were as follows:—Officers killed—5; wounded—6; missing—7; total—18. Other ranks killed—57; wounded—203;



“W” Beach (Lancashire Landing), Gallipoli.

missing—275; giving a grand total of 553 or more than half of the original strength of the Battalion when it left Cambusbarrow but a few weeks previously.

The names of the officers reported killed were—Surgeon-Major D. R. Taylor, Captain A. Wallace, Lieut. T. M. Alexander, Lieut. J. B. Innes, and Second-Lieut. A. H. M. Henderson.

The names of the officers reported missing were—Lieut.-Colonel J. McNeile, Capt. and Adj. J. C. Lang, Major J. Herbertson, Capt. H. Sanderson, Lieut. A. Bulman, and Second-Lieuts. P. Woodhead and J. B. Patrick.

The names of those wounded were—Captain M. Jobson (previously recorded), Capt. C. E. Macdonald, Lieut. J. Harrison, and Second-Lieuts. J. Elder, R. P. Smith, and W. K. Innes.

Of the 275 of the rank and file reported missing, only 13 were subsequently reported as prisoners of war. At first it was thought that the number of those taken as prisoners by the Turks would materially increase, but as time went on the fervent hope in many stricken hearts that more of our men were not “missing” but prisoners became blasted, and there is now no doubt whatever that with the exception of 13 all those reported missing were killed in action.

The names of the 13 Border men taken as prisoners were—Sgt. A. R. Wood (Stow); Private C. Burgess (Galashiels); Private A. Wark (Hawick); Private W. Martin (Duns); Private H. C. Turnbull (Earlston); Private F. D. Wallis (Selkirk); Private R. Renilson (Jedburgh); Private A. Graham (Edinburgh); Private J. Thomson (Kelso); Private A. Nixon (Hawick); Private W. Shanks (Kelso); Private R. Thomson (Hawick); and Private M. Davidson (Hawick).

As indicated, by far the greater number of casualties occurred on the 12th of July, but considerable casualties were suffered on the 13th during the Turkish counter attacks, which the Borderers repulsed, killing a great many Turks with their raking machine gun fire. In the repulse of the Turks, Sergt. Jardine, who was the N.C.O.

in charge of one of the Machine Gun Sections, played a prominent part, and his gun mowed the enemy down in big numbers.

During the attack on the 12th, the Borderers—both officers and men—were brave to a fault, never faltering or wavering. The first and second waves in the attack went over the parapet practically simultaneously. Colonel McNeile and the Adjutant led the second wave, and the survivors of the charge never tire of telling what a magnificent example the brave Colonel, who had endeared himself to all ranks, was to his comrades that day, when according to one who took part in the charge, “our big guns were shifting about six or eight cartloads of earth off the hill at a time, and bullets fell like rain upon calm water.” Yet of those who survived nobody can say what became of the Colonel and the Adjutant. They were well forward in the charge, and it is surmised that they were killed while on their way back to the second trench from the dummy one. How they met their death, however, is not known—and probably never will be known—but it is certain that the manner in which they fell was heroic.

When all were so brave and wore Fearlessness like a shroud, it may seem invidious to make any distinctions, but special note may be made of the gallantry of Captain Wallace, whose stirring cry, “Come away, Borderers! don’t be beaten!” inspired the eager men he led, and who, although badly wounded and with blood streaming down his face, continued to advance until he was wounded a second time, on this occasion fatally. Pipe-Major Bertram spoke to him as he lay dying, and his last words were—“I’m done for.” Lieut. J. B. Innes, too, although mortally wounded, continued to cheer on his men until he died from loss of blood. Poor Innes got one of his arms blown to bits by a shell, and after getting his cousin, Lieut. W. K. Innes, to cut it off, asked for a cigarette. Surgeon-Major Taylor worked unceasingly among the wounded during the attack, with shells bursting all around him, and he met death instantaneously while bandaging a wounded man at one of the dressing

stations. A special word of praise is due to the Battalion's stretcher-bearers for their great work on the 12th, Drummer D. Dick being especially prominent in bringing the wounded to safety under heavy shell fire, while splendid service in getting up ammunition, water, and food to the firing line was also performed by Regimental Sergt.-Major G. Murray, who later on was awarded the D.C.M. in recognition of his services on that memorable day.

As already indicated, the Borderers' objective was a third Turkish trench, which however proved to be a dummy, and there is now little doubt that the aerial reconnaissance was faulty in that this dummy was reported as a trench. In any case, the 1/4th K.O.S.B. attained their objective, and had the third or dummy trench been a trench in the real meaning of the word, there is no doubt that they would have held it at all costs. The theory has been advanced that the dummy trench was not the third trench that our men were meant to take and hold, but this theory is considered untenable in view of the fact that no other trench was seen by any of our officers or men after they had advanced beyond the second Turkish trench.

According to General Sir Ian Hamilton, the 4th K.O.S.B. "pressed on too eagerly and came under the *feu de barrage* of the French artillery," and in view of what General Sir Ian Hamilton says, it is interesting to quote the following extract from his dispatch dated 11th December, 1915, relative to the action of 12th and 13th July:—

"The action of July 12th and 13th was meant to be a sequel to the action of the 28th June. That advance had driven back the Turkish right on to their second main system of defence just south of Krithia. But on my centre and right the enemy still held their forward system of trenches, and it was my intention on the 12th July to seize the remaining trenches of this foremost system from the sea at the mouth of the Kereves Dere to the main Sedd-el-Bahr—Krithia road, along a front of some 2000 yards.

“On our right the attack was to be entrusted to the French Corps; on the right centre to the 52nd (Lowland) Division. On the 52nd Division’s front the operation was planned to take place in two phases; our right was to attack in the morning, our left in the afternoon. Diversions by the 29th Division on the left of the southern section and at Anzac were to take place on the same day so as to prevent the enemy’s reserves from reinforcing the real point of attack.

“At 7.35 a.m., after a heavy bombardment, the troops, French and Scottish, dashed out of their trenches and at once captured two lines of enemy trenches. Pushing forward with fine elan, the 1st Division of the French Corps completed the task assigned to it by carrying the whole of the Turkish forward system of works, namely, the line of trenches skirting the lower part of the Kereves Dere. Further to the left the 2nd French Division and our 155th Brigade maintained the two lines of trenches they had gained. But on the left of the 155th Brigade the 4th Battalion King’s Own Scottish Borderers pressed on too eagerly. They not only carried the third line of trenches, but charged on up the hill and beyond the third line, then advanced indeed until they came under the *feu de barrage* of the French artillery. Nothing could live under so cruel a cross fire from friend and foe, so the King’s Own Scottish Borderers were forced to fall back, with heavy losses, to the second line of enemy trenches which they had captured in their first rush.

“During this fighting, telephone wires from forward positions were cut by enemy’s shell fire, and here and there in the elaborate network of trenches numbers of Turks were desperately resisting to the last. Thus though the second line of captured trenches continued to be held as a whole, much confused fighting ensued; there were retirements in parts of the line, reserves were rapidly being used up, and generally the situation was anxious and uncertain. But the best way of clearing it up seemed to be to deliver the second phase of the attack by the 157th Brigade just as it had originally been arranged.

Accordingly, after a preliminary bombardment, the 157th Brigade rushed forward under heavy machine-gun and rifle fire, and splendidly carried the whole of the enemy trenches allotted to their objective. Here, then, our line had advanced some 400 yards, while the 155th Brigade and the 2nd French Division had advanced between 200 and 300 yards. At 6 p.m. the 52nd Division was ordered to make the line good; it seemed to be fairly in our grasp.

“All night long, determined counter-attacks, one after another, were repulsed by the French and the 155th Brigade, but about 7.30 a.m. the right of the 157th Brigade gave way before a party of bombers, and our grip upon the enemy began to weaken.

“I therefore decided that three battalions of the Royal Naval Division should reinforce a fresh attack to be made that afternoon, 13th July, on such portions of our original objectives as remained in the enemy’s hands. This second attack was a success. The 1st French Division pushed their right down to the mouth of the Kereves Dere; the 2nd French Division attacked the trenches they had failed to take on the preceding day; the Nelson Battalion, on the left of the Royal Naval Division attack, valiantly advanced and made good, well supported by the artillery of the French. The Portsmouth Battalion, pressing on too far, fell into precisely the same error at precisely the same spot as did the 4th King’s Own Scottish Borderers on the 12th, an over-impetuosity which cost them heavy losses.

“The 1/5th Royal Scots Fusiliers, commanded by Lieut.-Colonel J. B. Pollok-McCall; the 1/7th Royal Scots, commanded by Lieut.-Colonel W. C. Peebles; the 1/5th King’s Own Scottish Borderers, commanded by Lieut.-Colonel W. J. Millar; and the 1/6th Highland Light Infantry, commanded by Major J. Anderson, are mentioned as having specially distinguished themselves in this engagement.

“Generally, the upshot of the attack was this. On our right and on the French left two lines had been captured, but in neither case was the third, or last, line

of the system in their hands. Elsewhere a fine feat of arms had been accomplished, and a solid and enduring advance had been achieved, giving us far the best sited line for defence with much the best field for machine-gun and rifle fire we had hitherto obtained upon the peninsula.

“ A machine gun and 200 prisoners were captured by the French; the British took a machine gun and 329 prisoners. The casualties in the French Corps were not heavy, though it is with sorrow that I have to report the mortal wound of General Masnou, commanding the 1st Division. Our own casualties were a little over 3000; those of the enemy about 5000.”

On July 14th the 1/4th King's Own Scottish Borderers were still in the trenches, but they were thoroughly exhausted with the heavy fighting on the two previous days, and on the 15th the remnant of the Battalion returned to the Rest Camp for the purpose of being reorganised, Major Cochrane taking over temporary command of the Battalion, and Captain Forrest becoming Adjutant. Major Cochrane and Lieut. A. Galloway, it may be mentioned, were the only officers of the Battalion who came through the charge on the 12th unscathed. For the next week or two the Battalion was mainly engaged in furnishing fatigue parties for the purpose of removing stores at W. Beach and entrenching work. The Battalion was never back in that part of the line which it occupied on the 12th, and as no further advance was made there, the bodies of the vast majority of our men who were killed on that terrible day could not be gathered in and buried. All efforts to collect the dead proved fruitless. The few that tried it were killed, and definite orders had to be issued that no further attempts should be made.

The big battle over, life on the Peninsula became more serene, although the Battalion was greatly reduced in numbers, and it was with difficulty that sufficient men could be found for the various duties allotted to the unit. Major Cochrane continued in command for several weeks, after which Major C. A. H. Maclean from 52nd

Divisional Headquarters had command for a short period prior to the arrival in September of Lieut.-Colonel G. T. B. Wilson, A. and S. Highlanders, who had been appointed to the command of the Battalion.

CHAPTER IV.

SUNSHINE AND SHADOW.

During August, September, and October, conditions at Gallipoli were more pleasant. The enemy appeared to be short of shells, and sent comparatively few over each day. The Battalion took its turn in the firing line, reserve trenches, and rest camp. As a rule, the spell in the firing line lasted for a period of ten to twelve days. While in the firing line considerable sniping and bombing went on, but we had very few casualties in killed and wounded, although dysentery and jaundice gradually depleted the ranks. Several fresh officers arrived from the 2/4th K.O.S.B., but no drafts of N.C.O.'s and men came with them, and, as a matter of fact, it was December before any reinforcements in other ranks were received from home, and even then the two drafts which came out only totalled about thirty in number. As revealing how weak the Battalion was in numbers at this time, it may be mentioned that on September 13th the total strength of the Battalion was 230 of all ranks. This meant that only about 150 rifles were available for duty in the trenches.

Officers and men were constantly obliged to "go sick," and they were either sent off to Lemnos or taken elsewhere on hospital ships. There must have been comparatively few officers and men on the Peninsula who were not afflicted sooner or later with dysentery, and once a man took this vile trouble he experienced the greatest difficulty in getting cured of it. That dysentery and jaundice were so prevalent was not to be wondered at, as the Peninsula was, more or less, one vast cemetery, and the drinking water was bad. It is gratifying to report, however, that from August onwards there was considerable improvement in the rations. For a long



Another View of "W" Beach, Gallipoli.

time bread was an unknown luxury, but after the field bakery was established fresh bread was issued to the troops five or six days per week. Breakfast consisted of tea, bacon and bread; dinner of stew or bully beef; and tea, of tea, bread or biscuits, and jam (always plum and apple and apricot!). As the weather grew colder, soup was made for supper for the men who manned the firing line. In the early days on the Peninsula each man when in the trenches was obliged to cook his own meals, but after the field kitchens had been established behind the lines the rations were cooked there and brought up to the trenches by the orderlies detailed for the purpose by the respective companies. The parcels which began to arrive from home also helped to solve the food problem, and in view of the tremendous difficulties that had to be contended with, it was extraordinary that the mail service to Gallipoli was as good as it was. The news that a mail had come in always heartened everyone. When a mail did arrive there were always twenty or thirty parcels containing food for one of our officers, who had evidently a very attentive wife, and, as a consequence, on several occasions the officers' mess was well replenished. When in the rest camp the Battalion was frequently smartened up by platoon drill, rifle exercises, and marches to the sea at "W" and "Y" beaches for a bathe. Open-air concerts were also held at the rest camp, and on occasion the Divisional Band would play selections of music. There is no doubt that the terrible losses sustained on the 12th of July took the heart somewhat out of the Battalion for a time, but the officers and men were much cheered by a visit one day from Major-General Sir F. J. Davies, the new 8th Army Corps commander, who has a close Border connection. The General spoke to almost every officer and man in the Battalion, and his kind, cheery words did much to put a new spirit into the men. What specially struck one about the campaign at Gallipoli, and, indeed, the whole campaign in the East, was the relationship which existed between the Generals, officers and men of the rank and file. The true spirit of a noble form of brotherhood manifested itself on all

sides, revealing to all what a fine and wonderful thing comradeship is. As might be expected, this spirit helped to lighten the severe trials of our men, and they cheerily carried out the many and various tasks allotted to them.

During September the Battalion, when in the trenches, was employed pretty constantly on the Clunes Vennel extension, which was completed by our men on September 24th, and garrisoned for the first time. Early in October the Battalion took over a new part of the line which had not been occupied by the unit before. This was at the Vineyard, and the ground held included three bombing stations. During the night of October 12th we successfully pushed forward the North-East Bombing Station 15 yards, and ground which had been No Man's Land was occupied. Owing to the fact that the operations were carried out very quietly, the Turks were taken by surprise, and their bombing station, which was now but 15 yards from ours, was treated to a salvo of bombs at daybreak. On this successfully-executed enterprise the Battalion was congratulated by Brigadier-General Pollok McCall.

Early in November the Battalion was strengthened in numbers by having attached to it a squadron of Glasgow Yeomanry under the command of Major Wardle, with Captain Glen Coats as second in command. On the afternoon of November 15th the 156th Brigade of our Division attacked and captured the Turkish trenches in front of "Hope Street." Two mines were exploded, and a Turkish counter-attack was frustrated by a very heavy bombardment from our guns. That night a very severe thunderstorm broke over the Peninsula, and that the bad weather spell was at hand seemed apparent when another very heavy thunderstorm occurred the following night. As a result, most of the troops got thoroughly wet, and discomfort in the trenches was very great, while the whole of the Battalion's kit in the rest camp was under two or three feet of water. The storm was succeeded by very changeable weather—warm and bitterly cold spells in turn—until November 26th, when there commenced that awful three days' storm which hastened on the evacuation.

The morning of the 26th broke warm and somewhat mild, but just as darkness was beginning to gather around, a great thunderstorm, followed by heavy rain, broke with fury. Flashes of lightning lit up the whole surroundings, and from the trenches we occupied one could see great tongues of fire stabbing Achi Baba. It was a weird and truly wonderful sight, the bodies of the unburied dead in No Man's Land being seen momentarily quite distinctly. The storm lasted until 9.30 p.m., after which rain fell steadily. On the following day rain fell in torrents for some hours. Heavy streams of water rushed down the gullies, and the trenches became flooded, and in some places were rendered impassable. But the most terrible day of all was November 28th, on which day snow fell and a bitterly cold north wind blew with the strength of a blizzard. It was impossible to keep warm, and we were glad when at 1 p.m. that day we were relieved. The Battalion moved to the new rest camp near the Krithia Road, and the corrugated iron shelters and dug-outs which had been built there, and which provided a fair measure of comfort, were in the nature of a heaven-sent blessing, especially as for four nights bitterly cold frosty weather prevailed, although by day the sun shone brightly and enabled wet clothing to be dried. By December 3rd the weather was much warmer—something like a warm May day in this country. On the following day the Battalion was inspected in the rest camp by General Sir W. R. Birdwood, the "Soul of Anzac." On December 5th the Battalion moved up the line for a further spell in the trenches, and on this occasion suffered several casualties in wounded. From now onwards the Turkish shell fire greatly increased, and conditions in "Argyll Street," "Wigan Road," and elsewhere were by no means pleasant. That the Turks had now got more shells was evident on December 13th, when many 5-inch howitzer and high-explosive shells fell in close proximity to the Battalion's headquarters in "St Vincent Street." In endeavouring to locate the position of the Turkish batteries an artillery observation officer and bombardier were killed instantaneously by a shell

which landed in one of our first support lines, while a shell which landed in the firing line wounded five gunners who had been sending up aerial torpedoes, or "flying pigs," as our men termed them. As the Turks kept up their bombardment day after day it was presumed that they were firing shells which had been captured from the Serbians. On December 19th (the date of the evacuation at Anzac and Suvla) an attack was launched by the 157th Brigade on trenches to our left, and in order to cover the advance our Battalion made a demonstration by cheering and showing fixed bayonets above the parapets. This caused the Turks to retaliate with very intense rifle and shell fire, which continued for some hours. On December 21st the Battalion was relieved, and reached the rest camp, where we remained over Christmas. On Christmas Eve a special service was held at the 52nd Divisional Band's headquarters. Suitable hymns were sung, and a solo was contributed by Captain G. Dun of our Battalion. While the service was being held, several shells were fired by the Turks, and landed in close proximity to the band's headquarters. Later in the evening the junior officers of the 1/4th K.O.S.B. held their Christmas dinner in a spacious dug-out covered with corrugated iron. Those present were:—Captain R. R. M. Lungair, who presided; Lieuts. A. Galloway, J. G. Brown, J. M. Watson, J. S. Allan, H. L. Armstrong, W. M. Mercer, J. A. G. Cairns, J. Wood, J. M. P. Adam, and W. S. Brown. Of the eleven mentioned only five have survived the war. An excellent repast was enjoyed, a number of toasts were given and honoured, songs were sung, and the company was visited by Lieut.-Colonel Wilson, who wished everyone the best of luck. The singing of "Auld Lang Syne" and the National Anthem brought a memorable function to a close.

On the following day the Battalion moved up to the trenches for the last time and occupied the firing line. On the 27th the Turks started to heavily bombard the trenches on our immediate right with high explosive shells, which did considerable damage, and we had one officer (Captain G. Dun) and three men wounded by

shrapnel. On the 29th the 1/4th and 1/5th R.S.F. of our Brigade carried out a successful attack and occupied the remainder of trench G 11 A, taking 27 prisoners. A mine was exploded and the enemy surprised. Our Battalion sent a grenade party to the 1/4th R.S.F., a grenade party to 1/5th R.S.F., one officer and twenty men to carry grenades, and one officer and twenty men to support the 1/5th K.O.S.B. During this operation our Battalion suffered no casualties, but in the evening, when all was comparatively quiet, Lieut. Cairns, while laying wire in front of our firing line, was killed, being shot through the heart, and one man was wounded while on sentry duty on the parapet. Later in the night news was received that the 52nd Division would be relieved shortly by the 11th Division. Next day we had three more men wounded, and on the last day of the year the Battalion's cookhouse was wiped out by Turkish shell fire, Sergt. Master-Cook Glennie and two men being badly wounded.

The present writer remembers well those two last days of December, 1915. On the 30th Captain Lumgair's Company moved out of the firing line to one of the reserve trenches ("Wigan Road"). During the whole of the afternoon we were heavily shelled, some of the shells blowing in our parapet. About 10 p.m. the officers of our company got orders to send their spare kits to the rest camp, and our orderlies were detailed for that purpose. Those kits were not seen again until January 9th, when most of us found them intact at Mudros.

The night of December 30th was probably the most nerve-trying of all the nights we spent on Gallipoli—the night during which our troops in the firing line did not fire a shot between the hours of 7 p.m. and 3 a.m. the following morning. The sudden total cessation of fire on the part of hundreds of sentries along our whole line must have seemed strange to the Turks. The Turkish sentries kept on firing occasional shots as usual, but as the night wore on their rifles spoke at longer intervals, and towards midnight scarcely a sound disturbed the still air.

One of our guns, stationed not far behind "Wigan Road," kept firing for short periods at long intervals. It was always the same gun that spoke, but the Turkish artillery made scarcely any effort to reply to it, and the monotonous sound it made only served to render the silence more acute. Only too ready to fall asleep on other nights when the noise of rifle and shell fire always prevailed, I found it impossible on this particular night to let sleep steal away over my eyelids, and there were many other tired soldiers near me who were in the same state. And so we lay more or less awake the whole night through.

The night seemed as if it would never end. In the almost intense stillness the senses became exceptionally acute, and one had the feeling that something was going to happen. As it was, nothing happened. Unable to sleep, I lay and smoked, and several times I went out of the dug-out into the trenches and looked around. The darkness shrouded everything, and the silence of the great night had clearly cast a curious spell upon the imagination. I was looking up at the stars above me when suddenly a man lying on the fire-step of the parapet said in a low voice, which almost startled me—"Do you think Johnny Turk will come over?"

The uncanny silence somehow was closely identified with that question, for every one of us knew that our ruse was a deliberately-laid scheme to try and induce the Turks to attack. But the Turks did not leave their trenches. They might have thought we were leaving the Peninsula. If they did think so, why did they not shell the beaches as they did a few nights later? I rather suspect that they were afraid of being drawn into a trap. Anyhow, they made no effort anywhere to attack us, neither did they go in for any rapid fire, which was strange, considering that on numerous previous nights, when there was no cause for anxiety, they so frequently went in for "rapid" that we became amused.

The night slowly passed, the grey dawn appeared on the horizon, and day gradually declared itself. If the Turks still had any doubt about our being in the trenches,

they must have got a rude awakening at 12.30 p.m. that day (December 31st), for, at a given signal, every man in the firing line fired five rounds rapid, and our artillery treated the enemy to a heavy bombardment lasting only fifteen minutes. The "stunt" was known as the "Farewell to Gallipoli Stunt." The Turks were evidently taken by surprise, and must have feared that we were going to assault their lines, for their artillery kept up a continuous reply all the afternoon, and made things very lively, several of our men narrowly escaping death or serious injury from shells which landed in "Wigan Road."

It was understood that our Battalion was to be relieved at 7 o'clock that evening, but it was past eleven ere we got away, and owing to the frightful condition of the trenches and saps, it took us over three hours to reach the rest camp. When we were being relieved in the dark by an English regiment I heard someone say softly—"These fellows have got rations for seven days, and they're to fight the rearguard action." Seven days' rations! And as for the rearguard action, it could only mean one thing. At last I thought I knew the whole truth. The intimation that "the 8th Army Corps will shortly be relieved by the 9th Army Corps" was all a "blind," and, indeed, there was a pretty general feeling that more than a relief was intended. And as those strong men arrayed in battle order and wearing overcoats filed into the trenches I felt that they had a tough job on hand. We saw the New Year "in" during a halt in "C" Avenue, which was one maze of artillery wires, and greetings were duly exchanged. I don't think any of us will ever forget that last awful walk down "C" Avenue, and it was a great relief to be at the rest camp again, where we turned in for some well-earned sleep.

CHAPTER V.

THE LAST WEEK AT CAPE HELLES.

The last week at Gallipoli was one of the most memorable of all the weeks we spent there. We now felt certain we were going to evacuate, although our Colonel was first of all told that our army was to hang on to Helles at all costs, as the Navy wanted it as a submarine base. This, of course, the Colonel did not believe, and when he confided to some of us that Helles was to be evacuated, and got a promise that the 1/4th K.O.S.B. would be allowed to wait till the end, the cup of joy was overflowing. But there was much to do before we could get away. Stores and ammunition and mules, etc., had to be taken off, and at the various beaches there was much bustle. On January 2nd things were very lively at "W" beach, as the Turks shelled it incessantly, and Major Wardle of the Glasgow Yeomanry, attached to our Battalion, who was acting as M.L.O. there, was killed by a high explosive shell. On the intimation of this casualty, one of our officers—Lieut. A. Galloway—was sent down to take over Major Wardle's duties. The Turks continued to shell the beach all that night. They had the range to a nicety. Most of the shells appeared to come from the direction of Achi Baba, and it was surprising that the casualties among the fatigue parties who were loading the lighters were not much greater than they were. At "W" Beach there was a look-out man at the top of the cliff, and whenever he saw the flash of the Turkish guns a warning bell was rung, which gave our men a few seconds in which to run for any shelter they could obtain. A faint boom in the distance, the shout of "look out!" and then the crash of a shell on the beach—this pretty accurately describes the happenings at "W" Beach. The duties of the M.L.O. and his assistants were most nerve-trying in the circumstances. Great difficulty was experienced in getting the stubborn and nervous mules off. Sometimes after being collected for embarkation a shell would come over, burst in amongst them, killing some, and causing

a general stampede among the others. And then the work would re-commence, and the same thing would happen time and again. On the whole, however, it was wonderful how many of those valuable mules, which, in the hands of their dark-skinned drivers, performed such serviceable work on the Peninsula, were saved. By day and night the work went on; guns, ammunition, kits, and stores of all descriptions were got away, and a word of praise is due to the fatigue parties for the heroic manner in which they carried out their arduous and very trying duties.

For some unknown reason there was practically no Turkish shelling during the night of January 3rd, but during the following day and night the shelling re-commenced. On January 5th the strength of the Battalion and Glasgow Yeomanry (attached) on the Peninsula was reduced to 147 all ranks—the balance of the Battalion (about 80 all ranks) having left on the night of January 2nd, after performing fatigue duties at “W” Beach. On January 6th the Turks were much quieter, but some of their taubes came over and dropped bombs on the rest camp from a low altitude. During these last few days the rest camp became more and more deserted, as troops had been leaving quietly every night, getting away without mishap in cold, raw weather. In consequence, the greatest precautions were taken to give the rest camp its usual appearance, as the Turks were watching us narrowly, judging from the activity of their taubes, for which we kept a sharp look-out, and I think it was at this period that one of the most clear-sighted of the officers of our Battalion spotted “three Turkish airships,” which were ultimately discovered to be three flocks of wheeling starlings! Officers and men were ordered to move about as much as possible, and dummy figures were erected here and there to deceive the enemy. One of the chief employments at this time was the destroying of waterproof sheets, blankets, and sand bags, and burying tins of bully beef. The dismantling of our padre’s dug-out was in itself an arduous task. After cutting through one layer of waterproof sheets a layer of blankets was discovered,

then another layer of waterproof sheets, and finally the wooden roof and rafters! We felt glad, however, that our good padre at any rate had fared well, especially as first-class dug-outs were rare on the Peninsula. And so the days and nights went by, and anxious days and nights they were. Some of us got little sleep at night, and as we lay awake we could hear horses and waggons and guns rattling down the Krithia Road towards the beach.

During the forenoon and part of the afternoon of January 7th the writer was at "W" Beach along with Lieut. Mercer, and fifty fatigue men from our Battalion. On the way down we noticed that the Y.M.C.A. tent at the top of the cliff had been wrecked by a shell, and a Red Cross waggon, also sadly wrecked, lay at the side of the road close by a great shell hole, and elsewhere a number of horses lay dead. No sooner had we arrived at the beach than three shells came over in quick succession. The first fell into the sea, just missing by a yard or so a lighter which was loaded with scores of boxes of ammunition, and one shuddered to think what might have happened had the lighter been struck. As it was, a great cloud of water was sent up by the shell, and a man in the lighter was drenched to the skin but unhurt. The second and third shells burst on the beach close to our party, but we sustained no casualties. One observed that the sea was becoming rougher, and it looked as if a spell of bad weather was again to be shortly upon us. In the distance two nurses could be seen rowing in a small boat in the vicinity of a hospital ship. We loaded lighters for several hours, and Lieut. Mercer and myself having been shown through the big magazine in the cliff which was to be blown up some 36 hours later, we started out for the rest camp, which we reached without mishap.

In the afternoon, to the left of Krithia, the Turks made a determined attack, but were repulsed with heavy casualties, our naval guns pouring shells into their lines. Had that attack not been repulsed our "game" would assuredly have been up, as our troops on the Peninsula were by now comparatively few, and there were no serviceable guns left. By 6 p.m. peace reigned, and our

Red Cross waggons brought our wounded down the Krithia Road. In the evening we partook of our last meal on the Peninsula—tea, bread and cheese and jam—and at 9.45 p.m. what remained of the Battalion and the Glasgow Yeomanry (147 all ranks) was formed up on the road. It was a fine dark night and favourable for our departure. There were mixed feelings at going. We were leaving a place gained by the most magnificent heroism of the first troops landed, hung on to by the gallantry and determination of a handful of sick and wearied men, hung on to in the end against increasing masses of Turks and heavy guns—released by the evacuation of Suvla and Anzac—and we were leaving our dead there, our old comrades for whom the unfailing light was spent and done, and worst of all, was not the evacuation a slur on Great Britain? On the other hand, the alternative was to have remained on with a rapidly mounting roll of casualties, but in any case higher powers had decided, and that was sufficient for us.

The roll call having been taken, and all having been reported "present and correct," we set off noiselessly on our march to "W" Beach. At the top of the cliff the Battalion was halted, and all lay down while the Adjutant went ahead to find out exactly where we were to go. As we lay there several shells fired from the Turkish batteries at Achi Baba, and from our old friend "Annie" at Kum Kalessi on the Asiatic coast, burst close to us, but caused no casualties. After waiting about half-an-hour the Adjutant returned breathless with orders that we were to move down to the beach, where we found over a thousand troops of other regiments had already arrived. Here we were obliged to lie low again, as the pier by which we were to cross on to the steamer which had been drawn close in had broken down and the engineers were repairing it with all speed. We lay huddled close together on the beach. The suspense was great and the minutes seemed like hours. All was quiet, and every few minutes a faint boom could be heard in the distance. This was the signal that a shell had been fired, and then with a whistling sound it would come over

and burst on the beach or fall into the sea close to the pier. About one in every two shells landed short on the cliff above us and failed to explode, but had the Turks kept up a constant bombardment we must have suffered considerable casualties. As it was, by rare good fortune, the shells did no harm.

At last, about 1.30 a.m., January 8th, word came to "move," and forming up in single file we marched on to the steamer. It was an unforgettable journey across creaking planks of wood and over the deck of a half submerged boat. There was no need to order the troops to keep close together while going over the gangway to the small transport, which was named the "Prince Abbas." Once on board the Navy took us in charge. Darkness shrouded everything. The men disappeared mysteriously in one direction and the officers in another. I remember a naval man grasping me by the hand and ushering me into a large saloon where warmth came from a glowing fire, and a waiter was busy taking orders for light refreshments. It seemed as if we had come away from hell into Paradise. Very tired, we lay down on the floor, and the transport moving off between 2 and 3 a.m., we arrived a few hours later at Mudros harbour, where we disembarked and marched round to our camp at Mudros West, several miles distant.

The final evacuation of the Peninsula took place on the night of January 8th-9th. One of the last to leave was Lieut. A. Galloway of our Battalion, who had been engaged on duties at "W" Beach. After everyone had been taken off the magazine at Lancashire Landing blew up, the explosion being terrific, and the Turks sent over a hurricane of shrapnel. As the demolition operations had been so successfully carried through, there was little left that the Turks could make use of. Did they know we were going away? That has so far remained an unsolved question. It is said that one day the Turks threw into one of our bombing stations a piece of paper containing the following words—"We know you are going; good luck! good Englishmen," but I have not been able to get any confirmation of the story. I am pretty certain,

however, that they were heartily glad over our departure, as with the help of our Navy we all along made them very uncomfortable.

And now, after seven months of great hardship, the Battalion—200 all ranks, a fifth of the original strength as it landed on the Peninsula—was at Lemnos, where it was possible to sleep at night without hearing death moan and sing.

In November, 1915, by a remarkable indiscretion, the announcement was made in the House of Lords that Sir Charles Munro had advised the abandonment of the Dardanelles expedition, thus giving the enemy due warning of our intentions, and in view of this fact the complete success of the evacuation without casualties becomes all the more remarkable. In his dispatch of March 6th, 1916, Sir Charles Munro says:—"A series of four arguments, irrefutable in their conclusions, convinced me that complete evacuation was the only wise course to pursue:—

" (a) It was obvious that the Turks could hold us in front with a small force and prosecute their designs on Baghdad or Egypt, or both.

" (b) An advance on the position we held could not be regarded as a reasonable military operation to expect.

" (c) Even had we been able to make an advance in the Peninsula our position would not have been ameliorated to any marked degree, and an advance on Constantinople was quite out of the question.

" (d) Since we could not hope to achieve any purpose by remaining on the Peninsula, the appalling cost to the nation involved in consequence of embarking on an overseas expedition with no base available for the rapid transit of stores, supplies and personnel, made it urgent that we should divert the troops locked up upon the Peninsula to a more useful theatre."

The "more useful theatre" was Egypt and Palestine, and a more useful theatre it eventually proved to be.

Mr Sideney A. Moseley, described as "Official Correspondent with the Mediterranean Forces," on the other hand, in his book entitled "The Truth about the Dardanelles," says our army at Gallipoli was within a few miles of decisive victory, that just when the enemy's morale was broken we decided to evacuate, and that the evacuation was a great blunder !

Mr John Masefield, the poet, who was engaged on Red Cross work out East, however, has given us a valuable, competent, and eminently readable book on Gallipoli. Mr Masefield, who has a very fine descriptive style, gives a clear, reasonable, and comprehensive account of the whole Dardanelles campaign, and, unlike the over bold Mr Moseley, refrains from criticism, and confines himself mainly to a thorough explanation of the tremendous difficulties our troops had to face from the first, a picturesque account of the battles they fought, and the unequalled courage and devotion that were revealed by our men. Of the first and memorable landing Mr Masefield says :—

"No army in history has made a more heroic attack; no army in history has been set such a task; no other body of men in any modern war has been called upon to land over mined and wired waters under the cross fire of machine guns. . . . Our men achieved a feat without parallel in war, and no other troops in the world (not even the Japanese or Ghazis in the hope of heaven) would have made good these beaches on the 25th of April."

High praise, but well-merited, and of our newly trained troops who helped to make the landing, Mr Masefield says:—"They were the finest body of young men ever brought together in modern times"; and Mr Masefield writes of them so splendidly and with such a fine feeling of sympathy that his book may fittingly be regarded as a memorial of every man who laid down his life at Gallipoli. Here is a typical passage :—

"Up in the trenches the rifles made the irregular snaps of fire-crackers, sometimes almost ceasing, then running along a section in a rattle, then quicken-

ing down the line and drawing the enemy, then pausing and slowly ceasing and beginning again. From time to time, with a whistle and a wailing, some Asian shell came over and dropped, and seemed to multiply, and gathered to herself the shriek of all the devils of hell, and burst like a devil, and filled a great space with blackness, and dust, and falling fragments. Then another and another came, almost in the same place, till the gunners had had enough. Then the dust settled, the ruin was made good, and all went on as before, men carrying and toiling and singing, bullets piping, and the flies settling and swarming on whatever was obscene in what the shell had scattered.

Everywhere in these positions there was gaiety and courage and devoted brotherhood, but there was also another thing, which brooded over all, and struck right home to the heart. It was a tragical feeling, a taint or flavour in the mind, such as men often feel in hospitals when men are dying, the sense that Death was at work there, that Death wandered up and down there and fed on life."

The foregoing displays Mr Masefield's power, and there is nobody who was on the Peninsula who, reading the above passage, will not testify to its wonderful accuracy of description. Mr Masefield deals with the awful storm which broke over the Peninsula on 26th, 27th, and 28th November, to which I have already alluded, when we experienced snow, frost, and violent rain swept by full gales of wind, when every gulley was a raging torrent, and every trench a river, and men were up to their waists in water, when many men at Suvla were frozen to death, and sufferings were endured that could not well have been greater. "In one trench, when the flood rose, a pony, a mule, a pig, and two dead Turks were washed over a barricade together." During this terrible storm the "incomparable" 29th Division lost two-thirds of its strength. "In the three sectors over two hundred men were dead, over ten thousand were unfit for further service, and not less than thirty thousand

others were sickened and made old by it." Mr Masfield says that the Turk loss was much more serious than ours, the Turkish equipment being only good for summer, and many of the Turks having neither overcoat nor blanket. The effect of that blizzard, however, was to remove the curse of dysentery, whose daily toll of victims for some months was nearly a thousand, and to hasten on the evacuation.

And the evacuation was so brilliantly carried out that many people put the matter beyond understanding and say—"You must have bribed the Turks to let you go." These people exist, for the writer has met them and talked to them—people who, on the whole, would appear to be rather sorry that our casualties during the evacuation were not substantial. The probability is that had we had a few thousand casualties in the course of the withdrawal the public mind would not be so suspicious, and the uncharitable would not be with us. Seriously, could anything be sillier than the story that we bribed the Turks to let us go? Everything points to the fact that at Anzac and Suvla, where the first evacuation was carried out, the enemy mistook the preparations that were being made for preparations for the landing of fresh troops; and "by ruse and skill, and the use of the dark, favoured by fine weather, the work was done almost without loss, and as far as one could judge, unsuspected." A full moon was shining when our troops left Anzac and Suvla on the night of 19th-20th December, but they were unmolested, and as the rearguard of honour—two thousand of those that had landed in the first charge—moved down to the lighters, "one of their number saw a solitary Turk, black against the sky, hard at work upon his trench. That was the last enemy to be seen from Anzac."

It is possible that the attacks which our troops made at Helles on December 19th and 29th deceived the Turks and made them think that Helles was being held at all costs, and that we were determined to push on. The Turks seemed to have a greatly increased quantity of shells, and the writer can substantiate Mr Masfield when



After the Evacuation of Gallipoli. Troops arriving at Sarpi, Lemnos.

he says that the "Turks' shell fire increased and became very heavy." Mr Masefield says he does not know the answer to the following question:—"Even if the Turks were deceived at Anzac and Suvla, they must have known that you were leaving Cape Helles. Why did they not attack you when you were embarking there?" Mr Masefield, however, adds that "it is possible that they did not know that we were leaving. It is possible, on the other hand, that they were deceived again by our ruses. It is, however, certain that they watched us far more narrowly at Cape Helles after the Anzac evacuation. Still, when the time came, the burning of our stores after our men had embarked seemed to be the first warning that the Turks had that we were going."

Mr Masefield makes no mention of the attempt on the part of the Turks to cut off our troops to the left of Krithia on the afternoon of January 7th. It was, as I have already pointed out, "touch and go," and their shell fire was very great that afternoon; but our troops opposed the attack with great gallantry, showed the Turks that we could still hold them, and inflicted heavy losses upon them. As for the evacuation of Helles itself, I myself hold to the view that the Turks most probably knew we were going, but that they did not know the night on which we would depart. At it was, every Britisher was off the Peninsula by three o'clock in the morning of January 9th. Supposing that on that last night the Turks knew we were leaving our trenches and were embarking, they would certainly have met with great difficulties in making an attack. They would have been suspicious of mines, and in the inky darkness the barbed wire everywhere would have held them up and given us time to escape. But one thing the present writer feels absolutely certain of is this—the Turks were heartily glad to see the last of us.

Members of the Australian forces hold the opinion that a "few more men would have done the whole trick," and I myself talked on the Peninsula to a very optimistic officer who gave it as his opinion that the "Turks were short of ammunition during September and

October, and that with proper reinforcements we could have swept over Achi Baba had we made an advance then ; but he wisely added—"Of course, that is only my opinion, and it may not go for much." It was always difficult to find out the Turkish strength in men and munitions. I remember one day looking through a periscope at a Turkish trench which we bombed frequently at night. Somehow, I had an idea that the trench was not manned, that the Turks had withdrawn from it, and fellow-officers were of the same opinion as myself on that point. Some days later an attack was made on this trench, and the officers and men who made the charge soon discovered that the Turk was there in force, and our casualties were very much heavier than we expected them to be. I relate this little incident as showing how easy it was to be baffled. But there are some things about the Gallipoli campaign concerning which there can be no possible doubt, and these are, viz., that after the overthrow of the Serbians the Turks had any quantity of shells, that the natural difficulties against us from the start were tremendous, that the bad weather spells when they did come were terrible in the extreme, and that to have wintered longer on the Peninsula would have meant courting grave disaster. We came off the Peninsula not a day too soon, for the weather was again breaking on January 9th, and at Lemnos a few days later there was a repetition of the sort of thing which had occurred towards the end of November, and which, had we remained on the Peninsula, must have resulted in a big addition to the already heavy casualty list. And the experience was that even worse weather spells always occurred in February and March—a fact doubtless noted by those responsible for the evacuation.

The losses sustained by the 1/4th K.O.S.B. in killed, wounded, missing, and sick at Gallipoli were between 750 and 800.

CHAPTER VI.

MEMORIES OF LEMNOS.

AT LEMNOS.

On this lone isle, whose rugged rocks affright
 The cautious pilot, ten revolving years
 Great Pæan's son, unwonted erst to tears,
 Wept o'er his wound : alike each rolling light
 Of heaven he watched, and blamed its lingering flight :
 By day the sea-mew, screaming round his cave,
 Drove slumber from his eyes : the chiding wave
 And savage howlings chased his dreams by night.

Hope still was his : in each low breeze that sighed
 Through his rude grot he heard a coming oar,
 In each white cloud a coming sail he spied ;
 Nor seldom listened to the fancied roar
 Of Oeta's torrents, or the hoarser tide
 That parts famed Trachis from the Euboic shore.

Thomas Russell.

Few who were with the 1/4th K.O.S.B. on Gallipoli escaped acquaintance with Lemnos—"escaped," for to most Lemnos was not a pleasant place. To many the name recalls memories only of dysentery, jaundice, or rheumatism, in understaffed hospitals, or perpetual fatigues and indifferent food in the details' camp. But some few there were also who were privileged to see Lemnos at its best, and found it not merely a stony, barren, fly-infested refuse heap of dirty Greeks, but a place of beauty under a rising or setting sun, with rugged hills, sheltered, wooded valleys, picturesque windmills, and rambling, red-roofed villages. And if the Greek men were not always pleasant to look upon, yet the daughters could demonstrate that the classic tales of Greek beauty were not entirely mythical.

Before the war, Lemnos, Imbros, and some others of the Ægean islands were subjects of debate between Greece and Turkey, but at the beginning of the Gallipoli campaign they came to be practically French and British

property. They were used as intermediate bases for Gallipoli, the fairly extensive plains round the bays being crowded with reinforcement and rest camps, hospitals, A.S.C. stores, R.E. dumps, and the thousand and one necessary adjuncts of a large fighting force.

Imbros was known to few—to too few—of the 1/4th K.O.S.B. During August and September, 1915, small parties of men were sent there for training and rest. There, ten days' bathing, concerts, exercise, good food, and freedom from shell-fire, in most cases, put a very different complexion upon life. Luxuries at exorbitant prices were bought eagerly from the Greek canteens, and devoured at a rate that would have amazed the careful housewife at home. Even the army doctors were shocked to elicit from men that they had eaten a couple of pounds of grapes at a sitting, and were surprised at the resulting discomfort. Those who may deem such behaviour foolish and childish do not know what it was to live in the Gallipoli trenches. The desire for luxuries was natural, and satisfying the desire did, on the whole, but little harm. The great pity was that more of the Battalion did not get a chance of such a respite from the horrors of the Peninsula.

But very much better known than Imbros to the Battalion as a whole was Lemnos, where, as we have seen, the Battalion came after the evacuation of Gallipoli. And even those whose experience there in hospital and details' camp had been, to say the least, unpleasant, were glad enough to see once more its hill-girt harbour and stone-strewn clay. We were encamped on the slope of a hill beneath the village of Sarpi—a not unpleasant camp on the shore of a shallow bay. There, for a day or two, the men were rested. The southern exposure of the camp gave us the full benefit of a gratefully warm sun, and those whose nerves were jaded were gradually restored to equanimity. The nights were cold, but blankets were plentiful, and sleep was easy. Before boredom could set in parades were begun as of yore at Cambusbarron, and we soon began to approach the discipline and smartness once achieved under Colonel

McNeile's command. It was not to be expected that we would at once regain our old marching form; but though marching was difficult after trench life, and over country where roads were few and of the poorest quality, yet it was one of the most pleasant forms of parade we had. Usually we passed through one or more of the several scattered villages, whose narrow, cobbled streets, vine-clad walls, red-roofed houses, and lack of sanitation were especially noticeable. The largest and most beautiful village of all on the island was Castro, situated some six or seven miles from Sarpi camp, and those who had the good fortune to go there could testify to the fine wine which was to be had at a pretty little inn. Several of our officers also made the acquaintance of the charming little mountain village of Thermos, where at the "hotel," the delight of a natural hot spring bath, followed by a good meal, was much enjoyed. In the tour which the writer made of several of these villages, one, which I specially remember, was practically built on rocks. The houses seemed to have been literally dumped down anywhere, and most of them had the windows shuttered or half-shuttered, as if the sun's rays were something to be shunned and avoided. The shutters, doors, and outward woodwork generally were nearly all painted light blue, while the walls were white, and seen from a distance, the village, with the sun shining upon it, looked quite charming. One entered the village by an iron gate in the centre of a whitened stone wall, which enclosed part of the village. The first house I saw appeared to be of the better type. Adjoining it was a large orchard, which, I was informed, became a wonderful bloom of flowers in summer, but which looked bare and desolate. Close by were about a dozen children playing at some game. They were pleasant and tidy, and did not beg for money as the Maltese children do. Many of the houses had become temporary shops in view of the near presence of so many soldiers, and all appeared to be doing a large amount of business. The fruit sold consisted chiefly of figs and small but very juicy oranges. The former 4d per lb., and the latter were about 6d per dozen, and some-

times much cheaper. Brown bread and eggs could also be bought, but the bread did not look appetising, and, in point of fact, had a bitter taste. Generally speaking, the village appeared strangely lifeless. Nearly all the dwelling houses seemed at first to be untenanted until you caught sight of a face peering at you from behind one of the half-shuttered windows. The only building of note was a Greek church, the inside of which was very fine. At the top end of the village I came to a well, congregated round which were several veiled women, some engaged in drawing water, others in knitting. A little further on, and overlooking the village, were about a score of windmills, which were used for grinding flour. A pretty strong breeze was blowing, and several of them were working. I tried to keep up a conversation with an old peasant who was adjusting the sails of one of the mills, but it was no good. Near by was a high peak, nestling at the top of which was a small building, which appeared to be a chapel, and climbing up over the rocks until my legs ached, I eventually reached the summit, and felt a rare pleasure in being able to have a good view of a part of the island which Sappho loved so well. Returning through the village, I met a merchant riding on a mule, who had come from Castro, and from him I purchased some delicious cigarettes. The Greeks seemed to be inveterate smokers, as one rarely met a Greek who did not have a cigarette between his lips.

Whether by intent or happy chance, during the Battalion's route marches the halts were usually called just outside a village, and Greeks—men, boys, and donkeys—launched themselves upon us with ample stores of chocolate and tangerine oranges. Of all things bought on Lemnos, surely these oranges were the cheapest and best that ever found their way into the all-absorbing interior of the British soldier. No amount of them seemed to do any harm, and as delicious thirst-quenchers they will not readily be forgotten by those who know what a military thirst can be. But let it not be imagined that, fresh from a trying campaign, we had to spend all our time on parades and route marches. Except for

defaulters, our afternoons were free. Thursdays were holidays, and on Sundays there were only church parades. There were good football pitches on flat, firm sand, and balls were unearthed from somewhere. There was good rugby talent from both the Borders and the West of Scotland in the combined units of our own Battalion and the Glasgow Yeomanry, but for some reason it was found difficult to arrange a match. Still, it was like embracing a bit of the old country to have a rugby ball in one's arms again, and to see our old Scottish full-back punting in his own old style was as refreshing to those who watched as it manifestly was to Captain Forrest himself.

So we spent our time—healthfully, usefully, pleasantly. Those who had been in hospital on the island now also had a chance of additional little pleasures in repaying a small part of the kindnesses received at the hands of the hospital sisters. The light blue of the Canadian uniforms, and the duller grey of the English, soon gave evidence of their natural attractiveness. Perhaps in the private diaries of some of the officers one might find mention of afternoon tea parties, picnics, and even dances—but, after all, private diaries are private, and should be reserved at least for posthumous publication!

But life at Lemnos was not a time mainly of "beer and skittles." We had not been long in Sarpi camp before an unpleasant experience was given us of an *Ægean* storm. For close on forty hours the rain poured and a cold gale blew. Tents were blown down and had to be put up, and even the marquees had to have a rescue party constantly in attendance. But satisfaction was felt that the storm had come when the Battalion was on Lemnos rather than when in the trenches. After an interval of some years, the memories of the cold and discomfort are slightly dulled, but one remembers, chiefly as humorous incidents, such scenes as a man finding a rivulet flowing through his bed, or an officer in a pair of gum-boots and half a suit of pyjamas pulling a fallen tent over two valise-ensconced companions. The storm ultimately passed, and gradually our clothes were dried, and the old routine again held sway.

Then on January 27th, 1916, the first half of the Battalion, followed a few days later by the other half, set sail on H.M.T. "Nestor," and after a pleasant, uneventful voyage, arrived at Alexandria. From Alexandria we were taken immediately by train to Abbassia, a suburb of Cairo, near Heliopolis, and the Egyptian phase of our military history was begun.

CHAPTER VII.

IN TURKISH HANDS—A PRISONER OF WAR'S STORY.

As has been related in a previous chapter, one N.C.O. and twelve men of our Battalion were taken prisoners by the Turks on July 12th, 1915. The N.C.O. in question was Sergt. A. R. Wood, Stow, who was subsequently interned for the most part in Angora, Asia Minor, and who died on his way home, previous to the Armistice, at Smyrna, on or about 26th October, 1918, in the Austrian Hospital, from malaria and dysentery. Of the other twelve prisoners, the following died in captivity:—Pte. W. Martin, Pte. H. C. Turnbull, and Pte. J. Thomson. Sergt. Wood kept a diary of his experiences while a prisoner of war, and it is interesting to quote the following extracts therefrom as showing how our men fared in the hands of the Turks. Sergt. Wood records:—

“ We were captured in the morning of the 12th, about one and a half hours after the charge, and taken to a dressing station or hut for the purpose of having our wounds dressed. I was cut below the left eye, on the left ear, had a small piece of shrapnel in my right jaw, and had a bullet wound in my left side. We were robbed of our possessions and received bread and water from our guards. Our position was immediately behind the firing line in a gully. Towards evening a British bombardment commenced, terrible in its intensity, but unfortunately the shells burst on the opposite side and did little damage. We remained where we were until a gun, enfilading us from the sea, sent a shell into the gully not far from us. A few Turks were killed and wounded, there was general confusion, and the roof of our dug-out collapsed and we were covered with dirt. Our guard said ‘Iday’ and hurried us off to another dug-out round the corner. Here we met six others of our Battalion, who had been captured at a different

point. We were all wounded except one, and looked very miserable. For a time the din of battle was awful, and from my corner I could see the Turks were retiring. A big sergeant came along looking for shirkers and spotted one of our guards, and ordered him off to the firing line, and then brought his rifle to his shoulder as if to shoot us. We thought our end had come, but another of our guards rushed in front of us and I heard the words 'commander' and 'Engleish,' whereat the big sergeant moved off.

"We stayed there all night and next day, the 13th, and towards dark were taken away. I shall never forget that painful march. The smell of dead bodies was horrible, and the groans of the wounded pierced the air. We must have walked for two hours when a halt was called, and we climbed a steep gully to an officer's hut, where Pte. Wark was interrogated. After another hour's walk we arrived at headquarters, and were brought before a very aristocratic German General, who passed round a tray of sweets and intimated to us that we were not now enemies. Our wounds were again dressed, and we retired for the night after having a cup of sweet hot water and bread. We enjoyed a fine sleep on boards, with our boots for pillows.

"We were up early next morning, and this time we drove in carts to another dressing station, where our wounds were properly washed, etc. A Turkish officer asked me to play the piccolo; I did so, and he was delighted. Afterwards we had some rice to eat and sweet water to drink, and were about to retire for the night when a message arrived and we were again carted off, this time to a field hospital. There our clothes were taken from us and put in a bag—one each—and we were given sleeping suits, had our wounds dressed and were put to bed—our first bed since leaving home. We were treated well here, and the doctors were very nice. In the morning we got boiled rice and bread, and during the day bread and water, while the evening meal consisted of mutton, boiled rice, a bowl of raisins in sweet water, and bread. Cigarettes in plenty were also pro-

vided. During our stay here we were visited by many noted officers, had our photographs taken by a German journalist and by cinema photographers. After ten days' rest we again took to the carts, and after a long journey, going through Maidos, which was in ruins, we arrived at a hospital ship. The ship sailed on the evening of July 23rd, and after a fine voyage through the Sea of Marmora, passing on the way many interesting places, we got our first view of Constantinople. It was beautiful. The minarets looked fine as the sun struck on them, and the waters of the Golden Horn and the Bosphorus were a deep blue, but our ship turned to the right and we disembarked at Kadi-Kieu. From there we drove in rickety carts to the School of Medicine Hospital, where we stripped and had a hot Turkish bath, put our feet into slippers, and went to bed again. We were the first British prisoners to arrive at this hospital, and we were treated very well. The Turkish doctors, who were of a curious disposition, were constantly in attendance for the first few days.

“ On July 25th we were called upon by Mr Philips of the American Embassy, who took all particulars relating to us and said he would acquaint the British Government. A week later he again called and gave us each 30 piastres. We were also visited by two American ladies. We had a pleasant conversation, and Miss Stewart, asking permission, promised to send me a violin, but when it came the head Pasha objected, and, of course, we were disappointed. However, the ladies sent us four pots of strawberry jam, three cakes, a big bouquet of flowers, and some nice books, all of which were much appreciated. The meals at this hospital were:—

8.30 a.m.—Cup of tea and bread.

10 a.m.—Cup of warm milk.

1 p.m.—Mutton and bread and bowl of soup.

6 p.m.—Soup and bread.

“ There were two Frenchmen in the room next to ours; one of them, Henri Planquet, had come from New York, where he had been for ten years, and he

was able to interpret for us. The French language was spoken by all the doctors. Our room was at the top of the building, and two windows opened out on to a small balcony. Here we had a splendid view of the Sea of Marmora and the Bosphorus. The officers promised to allow us to visit the picture houses once a week, but the promise was not kept. It appeared that some of the higher officials had heard a story about the British ill-treating Turkish prisoners at Alexandria—which, needless to say, was untrue—and in consequence they decided that we should have similar treatment meted out to us. Accordingly we were ordered to move at once, and our old torn, dirty, and blood-stained clothes were given back to us. My boots, the only decent things I managed to bring with me to hospital, were not forthcoming, and, instead, I was given an old torn pair without laces, and being too small in size they pinched my toes terribly. That afternoon, August 26th, we drove to Haidir Pasha Pier (Captain Coxon of the 5th Norfolks was with us, and his entire clothing consisted of a shirt, short pants, and a pair of old boots). Here we met some wounded prisoners, mostly Englishmen, who were captured about the beginning of August. The boat came in, and we got aboard and sailed across the Bosphorus to Stamboul. We then drove to a big hospital in Pera. Our treatment at this hospital was very bad. There were not enough beds for the number of patients, and some of us had to lie on boards for a few nights with nothing on but a thin sleeping suit. I was nine or ten days there and did not have a blanket all that time. On September 5th I was discharged from this place, and felt very thankful. Twelve of us were marched through the streets of Constantinople for about two miles, and a sorry spectacle we were, the majority of us being without headgear, while some were minus boots and puttees and our clothes were torn, but the onlookers did not seem disturbed, as most of them were in a worse condition than we were. We arrived that evening at what we called the 'dungeon.' It was a sort of civil and military prison, and all classes of men were herded together here. Most

prominent were Armenians, Arabs, Bulgars, and Greeks. If our last place was bad, this was certainly not much better. The place was simply moving with lice, and it was difficult to snatch an hour's sleep. It was here that we started the 'caravana' system of taking our food. Each man was given a wooden spoon, and we all sat around a big copper dish (from 9 to 12 men to a dish) taking a sup therefrom in rotation. At first, this method of eating was revolting, but we soon got accustomed to it. For the first three weeks we were closely confined to the dungeon, but later we were allowed into a small yard for exercise morning and evening. There was a small canteen where we could buy cheese, fruit, etc. About this time we had another visit from Mr Philips (those of us who had no clothes, etc., had new suits supplied by the Turkish Government, but immediately Mr Philips had gone they were taken from us). He left us the sum of £68. There were four sergeants and about 98 men, and the money was distributed among all. The room in which we were confined would have given comfortable sleeping accommodation for 40 men, but that number was far exceeded, and when the number reached 120 the atmosphere of the place became unbearable, and we were relieved when the day came for our departure to Angora. Before leaving we were each supplied with blankets (one between two men), soap, a tooth brush, flannel shirt and pants, a towel, cigarettes, a pipe, and insect powder—these being gifts from the Americans.

“It was on September 24th that we left the 'dungeon,' and, marching to the pier, got aboard a small steamer and once again crossed the Bosphorus. Arrived again at Kadi-Kieu, we boarded a train for Angora. We travelled at a slow pace all day, and having had no food since the previous night, we felt very hungry. At 11 p.m. that night we received a half-loaf and a piece of cheese, which we devoured ravenously. Next day we were able to buy bread, grapes, tomatoes, etc., as we stopped at the small stations. Grapes could be bought at 1d per $1\frac{1}{2}$ lbs., tomatoes were 10 or 12 for 2d, and bread was 1d per loaf of $1\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. We arrived at Angora at about

11 p.m. on September 26th. I paid particular attention to the nature of the country we had passed through. In many places the scenery was magnificent, especially up in the wooded and mountainous parts, where there were many caves occupied by wandering Arabs. These caves were in precarious positions in the cliffs, and seemed to me to be unapproachable. We fell in two-deep at the station and marched to the School of Agriculture, from which place we had a fine view of Angora and the surrounding district. Here we had food, and the sun was high in the heavens before we rose next morning. Ismila Effendi, our commander, proved to be a genial old gentleman, and we got on very well with him. On October 4th I received my first letter from home. . . . On October 13th we played a game of football with a local team of Greeks, Armenians, and Tartars. They showed a good knowledge of the game, and played very well. On the following day we left Angora, and after many ' idays ' and ' chabuks ' we arrived at our destination, Kungheri, on October 17th. Here we were very well off, as we could buy goods in the town and do our own cooking, but our money soon vanished, and many men resorted to the selling of blankets, boots, etc., in order that they might have a tasty bite occasionally. . . . We were allowed up town every Sunday (not a Turkish Sunday, which is our Friday), and did some good business there. After a few weeks the weather became cooler, and one day there was a fall of snow about an inch deep, which made us think of home. In November a few bales of welcome clothes arrived. . . . On December 22nd a Turkish officer from Constantinople arrived and inspected the barracks. Several complaints were lodged, the chief being the holding-up of parcels, and he promised to look into the matter. On December 23rd Pte. Wark and I made our Christmas pudding, containing bread, crumbs, flour, eggs, raisins, nutmeg, honey, suet, etc. On Christmas morning the sun shone brightly, and everybody was early astir and down to the gully to cook the turkeys, etc. In the afternoon we had a football match, Army v. Navy, and the Army won by 5 goals to 1. After

the match we had our Christmas dinner, and then a concert at night, at which we were assisted by several Turkish musicians."

In January, 1916, Sergt. Wood records in his diary that he and his fellow-prisoners were sent back to Angora, and from Angora to Bozanti-Bilemedik, by way of Eski-Shekir and Konia. He was much struck by the beauty of Bozanti, which is surrounded by wooded mountains. Here the prisoners were handed over to a German firm who were contractors for a long range of tunnels, etc. Wages were paid, Sergt. Wood recording, under the date of March 1st, 1916, that he received "116 piastres as wages," he getting 20 piastres per day and the others 12 piastres. From now onwards parcels appeared to arrive frequently, and the prisoners were allowed to spend money freely in Konia and other towns. He states, however, that on November 3rd the party was sent back to Angora, and then proceeded to Mamuck. The treatment of our men at Mamuck was bad, and on January 21st, 1917, they returned to Angora. He mentions that he was inoculated on various occasions against dysentery, enteric, and cholera, there being an outbreak of cholera in August, 1917. On December 25th of that year the men enjoyed their third Christmas dinner in captivity, the menu consisting of "roast leg of mutton, potatoes and vegetables, and plum pudding, the latter made of rusks, flour, raisins, prunes, dates, suet, nutmeg, cinnamon, marmalade, and syrup." He also states that the Christmas festivities passed off well, "our best Christmas in Turkey so far." He secured a violin, and during 1918 played in the orchestra at one of the cinemas, and at other concerts. He records on July 29th that he is "just recovering from an attack of Spanish fever," and that two days later he has a relapse and is confined to bed. On September 25th he records that he is suffering from malaria, and a few days later he is taking quinine for ague. On October 3rd he passes a board of doctors for repatriation, and the last entry in his diary is:—"October 6th, 1918—I come out of hospital and prepare for journey to Smyrna."

Poor fellow! The strain of over three years' captivity in an uncongenial climate, coupled with recurring attacks of malaria and other troubles, proved too much for him, and he died three weeks later at Smyrna, being interred in the College grounds there with others of his countrymen. To the other prisoners of the Battalion who were with him in Turkey he proved a loyal, brave, and helpful friend.

CHAPTER VIII.

CAIRO, PORT SAID, AND KANTARA.

When we arrived at Polygon Camp, near Heliopolis, on February 1st, 1916, we found reinforcements of two officers and 94 other ranks awaiting us. A huge letter and parcel mail had also arrived, and a fatigue party was at once put on to sort out and distribute the many hundreds of letters and parcels. The mail had brought several bales of oilskin coats, sent out to the Battalion by the Galashiels Soldiers' Comforts Fund Committee for the use of our men at Gallipoli, but owing to the evacuation they unfortunately did not arrive in time to be of use in the trenches. However, had we remained on Gallipoli these coats would have been invaluable, but now that we were in Egypt they were not required. Soon we were training and re-equipping again. Lieut.-Colonel Wilson's indomitable energy had us hard at it during the forenoon—the men in squads of old and new hands (the former emulating the latter in smartness), and “the young officers” amusedly grousing under the R.S.M. It seemed strange to those who were fresh from hard training at home that they should have to continue it out here, and it seemed no less strange to those who had been through Gallipoli that they should have to return to the days of the babyhood of their soldiering; but without doubt it was in great part due to the strictness of that training that the Battalion so soon regained its high standard of smartness and discipline. And who that was there will ever forget the throatiness of communication drill or the trying delights of “ceremonial”? But here, as on Lemnos, our afternoons were generally free, and we had two whole-day holidays per week. Cairo is an expensive place to see, and the piastre is a coin that is all too soluble; but we had not been able to spend much on Gallipoli, and bank balances were high and the pay-books

could "stand" a good deal. Great, therefore, was the joy of spending, and neither the excuse nor the opportunity was lacking. In the streets, in the cafés, in Sheppard's or the Continental, one met friends long thought killed on Gallipoli or lost in the far corners of the Empire.

At Polygon Camp the officers were under canvas, and the men were billeted in large, well-ventilated huts. The weather was beautiful—warm during the day-time and chilly at night—and proved a pleasant change to the sort of weather we had experienced at Gallipoli. Indeed, it was quite a joy to be in Egypt, and with money to spend we did ourselves well. Heliopolis, a modern, clean, residential suburb of Cairo, charmed everyone. It is a sort of desert pleasure city, some 6000 acres of desert having been converted into splendid roads, avenues, parks, hotels, etc., and some of its buildings are magnificent, the Moorish style of architecture being prominently displayed. Here were golf links, polo and cricket grounds, and tennis courts, and a race course. Heliopolis, indeed, is rapidly coming into its own as a health resort, as in few other parts of Egypt is the air of the desert so pure and fine. To all of us the place seemed to teem with every kind of luxury. Close to our camp were the Abbassia Barracks, the headquarters of the dusky warriors of the Egyptian Army. Like ourselves, the Egyptians did several hours' drill every day, and very smart and keen they were. When a "fall out" was given, our men mixed with them, and a fine spirit of comradeship manifested itself among the black and white men. The Egyptian camp was a model of cleanliness.

We were much struck by the beauty of the buildings of Heliopolis, the famed Heliopolis Palace Hotel having been taken over as a hospital by the military, and here the patients had a splendid time. A huge white building, at night it looked especially beautiful under the dark blue, cloudless dome overhead. Cairo could be reached in ten minutes by electric railway and tramway, and we all found Cairo extremely wonderful, most of us visiting the mosques, the citadel, the tombs of the Caliphs, the

Zoo, and the bazaars. But, after all, gay and animated and amazing Cairo, with its weird and hidden sins, was not Egypt. It was fine to sit in the tranquil shades of the beautiful gardens with which Cairo abounds, and smoke delicious cigarettes, but finer still to venture into that dream-world a few miles from the city, and there watch the calm evening gathering around where the strange, lonely Sphinx, with serious gaze and big pouting lips, broods supreme. In the case of the Pyramids, special trips were organised throughout the Division, and strings of specially chartered trams conveyed loads of cheerful, singing Scotsmen through parts of Old Cairo, across Roda Bridge, and along the fine, tree-sheltered Pyramids Road. An idea of the impression which a visit to the Pyramids made upon the writer may be gained from the following sonnet, by one of England's most accomplished poets:—

I gaze across the Nile ; flamelike and red
 The sun goes down, and all the western sky
 Is drowned in sombre crimson ; wearily
 A great bird flaps along with wings of lead,
 Black on the rose-red river. Over my head
 The sky is hard green bronze, beneath me lie
 The sleeping ships ; there is no sound or sigh
 Of the wind's breath,—the stillness of the dead.

Over the palm tree's top I see the peaks
 Of the tall Pyramids ; and though my eyes
 Are barred from it, I know that on the sand
 Crouches a thing of stone that in some wise
 Broods on my heart ; and from the darkening land
 Creeps fear and to my soul in whisper speaks.

Unfortunately, our stay at Heliopolis proved all too short, as on February 17th the Battalion left by train for Port Said, where we encamped next day on a none too pleasant site close by the railway station. Here, for a brief spell, we had a quiet time, one of the chief occupations being bathing in the sea. By repute, Port Said is a filthy place, but we did not find it so. I recollect that one of the main streets was lined on both sides by tall trees, and it was a great luxury to sit in the shade of

their thick foliage, drink tea and iced mineral waters on the verandah of the Exchange Hotel, and listen to the birds piping loudly and sweetly. Near the harbour was situated the 31st General Hospital, of which many of our officers and men had, sooner or later, very pleasant recollections. This was one of the best equipped, best managed, and best staffed hospitals in the East, and I feel certain that officers and men of the Battalion who were invalided to this hospital will unanimously join with me in paying tribute to the kind band of doctors, sisters, and nurses for the manner in which they treated the many patients under their care. It seemed to me especially that there had been got together at this hospital the finest and most painstaking staff that could possibly be conceived. Here, in addition to the wounded, thousands of cases of dysentery, sunstroke, typhoid, and other fevers were treated skilfully by a frequently over-worked staff. We had not been long at Port Said when an Egyptian, whom we christened "Moses," appeared in our lines. He was a dark-skinned man of average height, with a pleasant and honest-looking face, attired in a long black coat, and wore a red Fez cap on his head. He introduced himself to our quartermaster, and offered to act as agent in the purchase of goods for the officers' and sergeants' messes. His services were at once enlisted, and if ever the Battalion had a friend it had one in this man. He did much for us during our stay in Port Said, and after the Battalion left for the Sinai Peninsula it was mainly through "Moses" that we were for some months kept supplied with those little extras that made life in the desert wastes a little more congenial. "Moses" supplied us with everything from soda water and tinned fruit to fly-papers and fishing-rods, was honest to a fault, and proved a most valuable acquisition to the Battalion.

It was on February 26th that orders were received that the Battalion was to proceed to Kantara on the Suez Canal, and on this day the squadron of Glasgow Yeomanry which joined us prior to the evacuation of Cape Helles ceased to be attached to the Battalion, and resumed duties as Divisional Cavalry to the 52nd Division. On

the intimation of this new move there was great bustle and excitement in camp, and the packing up and taking down and the innumerable other jobs which had to be attended to were the cause of a very early reveille next morning. However, we did not entrain until 2.30 p.m. The troop train consisted of first class trucks, the best at the disposal of the Egyptian State Railway, and cheers were given as we started out along the Suez Canal, on a new pilgrimage, the distance, duration, and monotony of which had only been exceeded by the Israelites themselves.

A run of a few hours at a slow pace duly brought us to Kantara, and after considerable delay and a good deal of confusion the Battalion arrived at the camp which was to prove our base for quite a time. February 27th, 1916, then, may be taken as the date on which the Battalion started on a long and weary year of wandering through the waterless desert wastes of Sinai. Two days later C and D Companies left for Hill 108, while the officers and men remaining in camp were obliged to undertake a new kind of duty and one which in many ways was experimental, far from easy, but at all times amusing. This was caused by the 31st Division departing for another front and leaving all their transport behind. The Battalion took over the whole horse transport of a complete brigade, consisting of some 200 horses and mules, countless G.S. waggons, water carts, field kitchens, etc., etc. Captain John M. Dun was in charge of the whole show, and his assistants were Lieuts. Alston, Grieve, J. G. Brown, Harvie, Elder, and Fair, who, with a troop of thirty men each, had the time of their lives, and this in more ways than one. Bearing in mind that with a single exception these officers had no previous experience of this kind of work, and that the knowledge of the men was quite on a par with that of their seniors, the position of affairs which prevailed during the next ten days can be better imagined than described. The going down to water three times a day, mules running amok (with no one daring enough to catch them), the surreptitious purloining of one another's mules to make

good deficiencies, the very early reveille and the consequent early retiral at nights, and the dozen and one other features which constituted this novel, fatiguing, yet withal enjoyable fortnight, on innumerable occasions provided ample subject matter for humour and jokes.

After the transport had been apportioned over the other units of the Brigade, a programme of steady training and route marching over the soft sand was inaugurated, but in the course of a few days a move was made to Hill 40, and later—on St Patrick's Day—another change took place, this time to Turk Top, where the Battalion was united again. This spot, or, rather, this sand dune, will doubtless for all time remain pre-eminent in the history of the Battalion. The day after our arrival we encountered the worst sandstorm experienced during 1916; digging was out of the question, and fortunately, so also was drill of any kind. Here at Turk Top was started the digging of a series of redoubts with which all ranks were to become very familiar, and between shovelling sand and steady drill, life was inclined to verge on the monotonous. But the times change swiftly, and Easter Sunday let us hear the sound of the guns again. That was the day on which the "Dueidar stunt" took place. It had been the duty of the orderly officer, in addition to his multifarious duties about camp, to patrol to an intermediate post held by us between Turk Top and Hill 70. Throughout the previous night nothing of moment had occurred, but no sooner had the orderly officer of that day got into bed than the noise of rifle fire could be heard. So up he had to get again and make a still longer patrol in order to keep our own redoubts linked up, and see that our part of the line was clear. Information as to what had transpired soon came to hand—the Turks had attacked our post at Dueidar, a palm grove eight miles away, held by the 5th Fusiliers, and had been beaten off with fairly severe casualties. On the afternoon of that day our Battalion pushed forward to Hill 70, which had been partially vacated by the 4th R.S.F., in a gallant endeavour to assist their sister Battalion at Dueidar. In and around "70" there was a

hum of bustle and excitement, and this was not lessened when we had to "stand to" on account of the imagined approach of the Turks. But Dame Rumour, as she has done on many occasions, played us false—the Turks had had enough, and a few camels tearing along by themselves with "Gippos" in hot pursuit was the sole reason of the commotion. The day after the battle one of our platoons was sent up to the scene of the fight to bring back some prisoners, and the same night another party was sent to escort a convoy of a hundred thousand rounds of ammunition. This latter undertaking was a somewhat eerie job, as a few Turkish snipers were said to be still on the loose. However, this story was groundless, as nothing was either seen or heard of the snipers, and the convoy, after a hard two hours' march, reached Dueidar safely. On the same morning that the Turks attacked Dueidar, squadrons of the Gloucester and Warwickshire Yeomanry were greatly outnumbered at Katia and suffered a reverse and considerable casualties, and at night remnants of horsemen galloped into our camp at Hill 70 with exciting stories of the fight. By this time, however, the Australian Light Horse and the New Zealand Mounted Rifles had come up, and they went in hot pursuit of the retreating Turks. The Colonials also encamped at Hill 70, and during the next few days more normal conditions were resumed, and our Battalion raised a strong Rugby team to play the Wellington Light Horse, a strenuous and exciting game ending in a win for the Colonials by 6 points to nil. Now that the Turks were known to be about, outpost duty seemed more important than ever, and visiting patrol at night to the various scattered posts near Hill 70 became a trifle more exciting. With the advent of the month of May the sun became appreciably hotter, and the intense heat began to tell on some of our men, while the fly nuisance became more pronounced. With an eye of torrid brass the sun stared callously on everything, and from 10.30 a.m. till 3.30 p.m. all work had to be suspended. The sun made one's tent a stifling place, and caused one's back and shoulders to ache. There is, fortunately, always

night as well as day, and a sigh of relief seemed to rise from the endless sands when the sun went down—a shrine of death and tranquil beauty. The blush of rose at the going down of the sun was always a sight to satisfy the weary and sorely tried eyes, but often one craved for the “shady sadness of a vale, far sunken from the healthy breath of morn.” Here and there on the illimitable desert were stunted shrubs and bushes and pretty flowers, and down by the canal palm trees grew straight and tall, but one missed what Keats, in his wonderful poem, “Hyperion,” calls

“Those green-robed senators of mighty woods,
Tall oaks, branch-charmed by the earnest stars,
That dream, and so dream all night without a stir.”

There was little to see, with the exception of barrenness and the wilderness, the violet-pink sky of dawn, the bright glare of noontide, and the unforgettable and tender loveliness of sunset. Night always came down suddenly, like a great mountain shadow. Much more quickly than in Scotland, day receded into the unknown, and one missed the long, lingering summer twilights which in one's own country hold the imagination with so subtle a spell. The nights were calm, cool, and serene, and their great beauty captivated the heart, the spell being broken only by the weird chanting of the Egyptians in the Labour Corps camp, the call of the jackal and the chirp of the cricket. The stunted shrubs and bushes seemed to hide the wraiths of the warring peoples who thousands of years ago had traversed those uncanny and grey desert wastes. One felt conscious of a sense of far-off things amid this dust of dead worlds. Fear crept among the shadows, and a strange, haunting spirit brooded over all. Far-off the head-light of a ship passing through the Suez Canal could be seen moving slowly; the sacred mountain on which Moses received the tables of the Ten Commandments gored the sky somewhere in the long distance; those vast tracts of desert stretching away to the plateau of Judea were as waterless as they were in ages past; the stars that hung like golden spiders

in the heavens above, and "ever stirred to some strange breath," were those that shone in the days of long-dead empires and peoples; O stars that were! O stars that are! O time that was! O time that is! . . .

When the moon shone it flooded the land with golden light, and it did one good to go into the desert and let the mind shake off the thought of conflict, and

"Dream as if there were no wars, nor wounds nor scars,
And all the world were not a new-dugged grave."

CHAPTER IX.

ROMANI, RABAH, MOHAMIDIYA.

The Battalion had by now been reinforced by Major Jobson and two officers and 115 men from the 3/4th Bn. K.O.S.B., and by twenty N.C.O.'s and men from the 3rd Bn. K.O.S.B. These reinforcements were much needed, as the Battalion had a great deal of digging to do. On May 15th, 1916, the shade temperature was as high as 115 degrees, and on the 16th it was 114 degrees, and officers and men got an idea of what intense heat was like. At Hill 70 the question of the water supply became more important, and an officer in charge of water was appointed. The Battalion's water was brought up daily in fantasses by camels from Kantara. The water was then emptied into large tanks, from which the supply was drawn for cooking and washing purposes, and from which the officers and men filled their bottles once daily. The issue worked out at the rate of about three-quarters of a gallon per man per day for all purposes, but later the issue per man was reduced to half-a-gallon. As might be expected, the water had to be used most sparingly, and this was constantly impressed on all ranks. Although worn out with the day's toil and heat the men always jumped up with alacrity when the time came for water-bottle parade. Water-bottles were usually filled at 6 p.m., but by 10 a.m. next day fifty per cent. of the bottles were empty. The water we got in the Sinai Peninsula was not bad, but it had the effect of making one thirsty, and if one took a drink one always wanted to go on drinking. A good deal of soda water was consumed, but it could only be had in limited quantities from Port Said, and occasionally a barrel of beer made its appearance in the canteen. The Egyptian labourers, who made the roads and laid the railway, were great drinkers of water, and,

as a fact, could not, or would not, work unless they got all the water they wanted. The writer was for a time in charge of many tanks, containing in all several thousands of gallons of water, and I often experienced trouble with the natives, who always drank their supply and wanted more. The engineer said to me—"If you don't give these men all the water they want they won't work in this heat. So long as they have water they will work hard all day." One black man, I remember, came to the tanks for water from a point six miles off twice every day to get the supply for himself and several of his companions. Two huge biscuit tins for holding the water, one at each end, were tied with cord to a stout pole, which lay across his shoulders. And every day he walked twenty-four miles—making two of the journeys of six miles each with several gallons of water! I used to feel sorry for that poor soul, as it must have been a big task to carry that burden with the temperature at over 100 degrees in the shade. One day one of the tins was leaking, and after he had filled both tins and set out on his return journey, I saw the water running out of one of them. He had not noticed this, but a soldier stopped him, made the tin water-tight, and he continued on his way. Needless to say, there was always a sentry guarding the water tanks and carts both night and day, and he certainly required to be very vigilant.

On May 18th the Battalion went down to Kantara again to rest and re-equip. A little training was carried on, but the chief item in the day's proceedings, apart from the somewhat heavy station fatigues, was a bathe in the canal. Here let it be clearly stated that the bathing which the Battalion enjoyed was not merely a matter of pleasure, but, owing to the great scarcity of water, frequently an urgent necessity. After a few days' stay at Kantara we moved again—this time to pastures new (there are few pastures despite the fact that the Israelites called the desert their pasture land)—and went up to Romani, 25 miles east, which was at that time Railhead. A fine new camp was pitched, and here we experienced our first serious visit of enemy aircraft since landing in

Egypt. On Sunday, June 11th, a taube came over, but the airman reserved his bombs till he was flying over Kantara. Little damage was done, but the incident was in itself important, as marking the commencement of a continual, though irregular, series of visits. Reference has been made to the fact that our position was 25 miles advanced east of Kantara, and having regard to the strategical situation and what had happened at Dueidar, the various units of the 155th Brigade "stood to" in turns, one battalion usually at a time.

On Thursday, June 15th, the Brigade made a start on what were in future known as "mobile column stunts." Early on the morning of that day the Brigade marched out for a three days' "show," but for reasons which can be better imagined than explained, the column arrived back the same night very tired and very hungry. An interesting sight to all of us was that of twelve of our own aeroplanes which passed over our camp on 18th June, and, if reports speak correctly, they did very material damage at El Arish on that day.

The evening of Tuesday, 20th June, will long be remembered as the night of "Nimmo's Storm." The said officer was acting Adjutant at the time, and in view of information which had come in, he caused a message to be sent round to the effect that a terrible storm was approaching, personally telling the officers, with the result that a few moments later the noise of hammers reminded one forcibly of the work in a shipyard. But all the hammering and securing of tents went for nothing, as the storm did not touch our area at all. Wednesday, June 28th, witnessed an exciting air fight right over our camp, the British airman chasing Fritz away with machine gun fire, but, unfortunately to the great chagrin of the onlookers, the strong sun interfered, and both planes were soon lost to view.

The tenth of July, by which time the strength of the Battalion was 25 officers and 459 other ranks, saw the start of a course of musketry at a specially constructed 30 yards range. The course consisted of seven practices,

and as prizes were to be awarded for the best scores, there was a good deal of enthusiasm displayed. In a way, too, the idea was novel, as this was the first occasion on which the men had had any practice since leaving Gallipoli. The heat at this period was very great, and while not so great as was experienced in the last days of May, the thermometer registered 109 degrees to 112 degrees in the shade.

July 20th was an outstanding day, and provided a welcome break in what some termed a dry and dreary monotony, as orders were received for the Battalion to be ready to move out on 15 minutes' notice. On the previous day a report had been received that the Turks were concentrating at Bir-el-Abd, 25 miles east of Romani, and on this day (20th), after waiting on all day for something to happen, "A" Company under Captain Forrest was sent out to a new post to dig themselves in. There they passed a hard but uneventful night, but down at Battalion Headquarters matters were lively. The reason for this was that a sensational message had been received to the effect that an attack was imminent, and in consequence "B," "C," and "D" Companies moved out and took up a defensive position. If all stories are true, there was a fair spark of comedy despite the apparent seriousness of the situation, but that side of the matter, though probably the more interesting to some who took part, had perhaps better be omitted from this review. The Turks, however, were still 25 miles off, so all the commotion was for nothing. Four days later "A" Company, having done a good deal of work at Itmaler (afterwards known as Redoubt No. 23), changed over to a new part of the redoubt line and started on a new work, but owing to the strain of the past few days, digging and wiring by day, watching and patrolling by night, the men were well nigh exhausted, and the Egyptian Labour Corps was sent up to do the sandbagging. By this time the Australians on their horses were practically in touch with the Turkish patrols, and this provided ample scope for the prophets, particularly as to how "the 4th" would be affected.

The Battalion now moved forward and created a new camp just beside Katib Gannet, a prominent sand hill on the outpost line, and while only one company was actually holding a redoubt, by this time known as 22A, practically the whole Battalion was engaged holding various other posts. As an indication of what was likely to happen, it may be mentioned here that on July 25th four enemy aeroplanes came over, one of which dropped a message asking us to fly larger red cross flags over our hospitals, and in the early morning of the same day the Australians had a scrap with the enemy. This was the start of the fighting. Three days later, the 28th, the Turks pushed back our patrols and came forward to within a mile of Katia, a large oasis between 7 and 8 miles east of Gannet. "A" Company was now relieved in 22A Redoubt by "C" Company, and the change over was welcomed by both, although it did seem hard lines that "A" should require to vacate the post just when there seemed a likely chance of having a brush with the enemy. Colonel Wilson, however, was of the opinion that the officers and men must have a rest after their eleven days' arduous labours. Immediately on reaching camp two taubes appeared and started to bomb the camp, and in consequence excitement was rampant. Fortunately our good luck continued and there were no casualties to record in our own unit. By August 1st the Battalion's strength had been increased to 33 officers and 540 other ranks.

On August 3rd heavy firing could be heard in the distance, and this we were later informed was our monitors bombarding El Arish. There were now many aeroplane conflicts, and it was evident that the Turks were coming nearer. At 8.30 p.m. on August 3rd the Battalion, or rather the reserve of it ("A" Coy. and details), the remainder being at various posts, was hurriedly ordered to move out, and in the early hours of the next day, August 4th, the firing started all along the redoubt line. Two platoons were ordered to line a ridge in front of our rear position previously prepared. Immediately at dawn heavy shelling and rifle fire became

the order of the day, and the dropping of bombs by enemy aircraft did not make the situation less lively. Matters quietened down a little about 8.30 a.m., and several of our platoons were sent forward on to ridges to give support to Nos. 4 and 5 redoubts, the holders of which were having a bad time. So also was 22A redoubt under Capt P. L. P. Laing ("C" Coy.), but this redoubt, almost on the bend of the line, received comparatively few shells although receiving a fair share of rifle fire from the enemy on Wellington Ridge. With the approach of night the firing died down very considerably, and, but for an occasional shot, one would have been inclined to believe that the events of the previous 24 hours had been a dream. Subsequent events recalled Napoleon's famous dictum—"order, counter-order, disorder." On the same night word was brought by a very excited and agitated messenger that the Turks had got through the wire between Nos. 6 and 7 redoubts, and immediately the reserve of the Battalion under Colonel Wilson rushed forward, fixing bayonets on the run, and occupied a line of rifle pits pre-arranged for any such contingency. At this point mention must be made of the reconnaissance performed by Captain Forrest, which, together with his good work on Gallipoli, resulted in his being awarded the Military Cross at a later date. Special note also falls to be made of the excellent defence put up by "C" Company at 22A redoubt under Captain Laing, who, in consideration of his fine work in this engagement, was subsequently awarded the Order of the Nile.

The stillness which prevailed subsequently indicated an alteration of tactics on the part of the enemy, and when morning came (August 5th) the enemy was retiring. Next day the whole of the 155th Brigade marched to Rabah (an oasis near Katia), and those who took part in that march are agreed that it was easily the hardest trek they had experienced in the desert so far. "A" Company escorted the Brigade Machine Gun Company, and marched one hour and 40 minutes without a halt, while the remainder of the Battalion had to contend with as

great a hardship in lying for three hours beneath a broiling sun owing to the artillery which they had to escort being late in starting out. Few were the officers and men who were not apparently "done to the world" when Rabah was reached, but a cup of tea, the safety-valve of the British Army in Egypt, worked wonders, and though leg-weary and sore, everyone was soon cheerful again. Then the sentries having been posted, officers and men, except "those who work while others sleep," forgetting the responsibilities of the day and regardless of the probabilities of the morrow, lay down to snatch a few well-earned hours of rest.

The Battalion remained at Rabah until August 14th, when it left for Romani, and on the following day the whole Battalion was inoculated against cholera. On August 26th the Battalion returned to Rabah and took over outpost duties. However, on September 11th the 52nd Division was relieved by the 42nd Division, and the Battalion marched from Rabah to Mohamidiya and encamped there. On September 12th Colonel Wilson relinquished the command of the Battalion, and as Major Jobson left two days later to take over the command of the 52nd Division Rest Camp at Port Said, Captain Forrest took over temporary command. To the end of September a progressive training programme was in operation.



Lieut.-Colonel Wilson calling for three cheers for the King after reading out His Majesty's congratulatory message on the Battle of Romani.



Capt. J. Dickson, the late Capt. W. F. Cochrane, the late Lieut. R. B. Anderson, and the late Lieut. A. Ainslie.



LT.-COL. J. M. B. SANDERS, M.C.



LT.-COL. R. DASHWOOD-TANDY.



The Late MAJOR W. T. FORREST, M.C.



MAJOR P. E. P. PAYNE.



LT.-COL. G. T. B. WILSON, D.S.O.

CHAPTER X.

THE ATTACK ON OUTPOST HILL.

Early in October, 1916, the Battalion was placed on a mobile column footing, and all stores which could not be carried were returned to Romani, which, in view of the approaching move eastwards, became the dump of the 155th Brigade. On October 12th the Battalion moved to El Afein. This proved a very trying march, especially as the absence of any breeze during the first three hours made the journey very exhausting, but only one man fell out. Next day the Battalion moved out for Bir-el-Abd, and on the day following "B" and "C" Companies took over the outpost line there. During the next few days the Battalion was engaged mainly on strengthening defences and finding observation posts. A number of enemy taubes came over our lines, but the bombs which were dropped caused no casualties. On October 21st Lieut.-Colonel J. M. B. Sanders, M.C., Leinster Regiment, was appointed to the command of the Battalion. On October 27th the Battalion marched to Salmana, and on November 7th a draft of 155 N.C.O.'s and men arrived, the mobile column strength now totalling 750 all ranks. During November nothing of importance occurred, the Battalion being mainly engaged on outpost duties. The weather at this time was very changeable—sometimes very cold and sometimes very warm. On December 1st the Battalion made a move further east, and on the following day arrived at El Mazar. On December 22nd the Battalion, having rested the previous day at El Madaan, moved to El Brittia, acting as rearguard to the 52nd Division. It may be mentioned that it was from El Madaan that we caught our first glimpse of the sea since leaving Mohamidiya, and in the distance, about 20 miles away, could be seen the spire of the Mosque in El Arish and Nebi Yesir's Tomb, on a knoll by the sea coast. On the

following day the Battalion arrived on the outskirts of El Arish, and a day later marched through the village, the defences of which had just been evacuated by the Turks, who were being pursued by our mounted troops. Christmas Day found the Battalion resting and digging new trenches. El Arish was the first town encountered by the Battalion in a journey of over a hundred miles since leaving Port Said in February. The Battalion's stay at and around El Arish was made as pleasant as possible. Here boxing contests took place, and unique Soccer and Rugby games were played, with the players floundering up to the knees in sand! On several occasions the Australians provided the opposition to our Rugby fifteen.

The month of January, 1917, saw the Battalion engaged chiefly on beach fatigues and route marches. At the beginning of the month very bad weather prevailed, rain and sand storms causing considerable discomfort. As an example of the strange climatic conditions which prevailed, it may be mentioned that in places the hurricane would form hills of sand one day, and when we awoke next morning we would discover that during the night the hills had mysteriously disappeared. Platoon training and night operations occupied the month of February, the strength of the Battalion having now been made up by several drafts to over 800 all ranks. On February 27th the Battalion moved from El Arish to El Burj, and arrived there without suffering casualties. On March 7th the Battalion moved to Sheik Zowaiid and took up its position on the outpost line, and from the 20th to the 24th the Battalion was hard at work on the trenches. It may be added that during this period a day's respite was enjoyed by a percentage of our troops, who attended a big race meeting at Rafa, known as "the Desert Column Spring Meeting," in connection with which no fewer than twenty silver cups were awarded as prizes. Our Battalion was represented in the races by Lieut. G. Fair, who rode the transport officer's horse, and came in fifth in a field of twenty. There were in all ten events, concluding with a highly

amusing mule race, known as the "Jerusalem Scurry." On March 25th the Battalion moved with the rest of the 155th Brigade to Khan Yunus, and on the following day continued its march to In Seirat. As the battle for Gaza was in progress, things became much more lively. On March 28th the divisions in front of us were withdrawn at dawn, and passed through our lines, and we were ordered to dig-in on the ridge in front of Dir el Biela, our outpost line being about half a mile distant from the Wadi Ghuzee and about four miles from Gaza. That day "A" Coy. was sent out to save what abandoned stores were still lying out in front, and the company got about 500 camel loads of all sorts of materials, and, needless to say, the men had a complete refit of blankets, etc., out of the spoil. The last day of the month saw the Battalion in reserve, the 155th Brigade having moved to the outpost line covering El Breij. On the first of April the Brigade made a reconnaissance in force and got close to Gaza, and parties were in the Wadi Ghuzee, digging wells and making roads. Next day the Turks tried to get into the Wadi, but were driven back by our artillery fire.

On April 4th the outpost line was taken over by the Battalion from the 1/5th K.O.S.B., one company being stationed at Red House. Recollection of this ruined red-tiled house will doubtless be brought home to many readers by the following very fine poem which has appeared over the signature of Robert R. Thomson in "Chambers's Journal":--

THE RED-HOUSE GARDEN.

O'er ridge and plain calm hung the mist of dust,
 Save where it soared amidst the whirlwind gust.
 The distance trembled 'neath the noonday glare;
 Hot airs hung stagnant in the wadi, where
 The transport toiled along.

Above, along the banks, the garden slept,
 With yellow-flowering cactus hedge, where crept
 Grey lizards, rattling through the fleshy leaves
 And bushes, all entangled with the reeves
 Of blue convolvulus.

Aweary of the constant, thundering guns,
 I turned old Sandy up the path that runs
 Toward the red-tiled house, which ruined lies,
 Verandah wrecked, roof gaping to the skies,
 A heap of masonry.

I led him through a gap, and carefully
 We picked our way between an almond-tree
 And snipers' post by sandbagged, loopholed hedge,
 With cartridges still littered on its ledge,
 Where nigh there lay some graves.

I saw the broken water-wheels, the wells,
 The fruit-trees green, though riven by the shells,
 Citrons and oranges with whitest flowers,
 Vines, olives, fig-trees, with their richest dowers,
 And limes and towering palms.

The tamarisk and cedar gave their shade,
 Whilst in the open places melons strayed.
 And yet the garden in its beauty lay
 A waste o'ergrown with weeds—I turned away :
 Despair was even here.

I wondered why should all this slaughter be ;
 And then I saw a dark pomegranate-tree,
 Aglow with crimson blooms. Some petals fell
 Like showers of drops of blood that seemed to tell
 Of wounds, and pain, and death.

It seemed as if the very trees did bleed ;
 But when I closer looked, then I took heed
 That whence the flowers had fallen always hung,
 Unripe and small because they were so young,
 The round pomegranate fruit.

E'en then the fruit swelled with the luscious seeds
 That satisfy the thirsty traveller's needs—
 I saw the promise, when this war should cease,
 Of all this weary land refreshed by peace,
 And rich with seeds of life.

This land from tyranny we yet should free ;
 Not useless then would all this slaughter be.
 A random shrapnel's smoke came drifting by ;
 But hopefully I turned, and horse and I
 Walked on toward the sea.

By April 15th all preparations had been made for the advance to Kurd Hill, and on the following day the Battalion crossed the Wadi Ghuzee and entrenched in two lines facing north-east. During the morning of the

16th the Battalion was heavily shelled, and, on the 18th, enemy howitzers kept up a heavy bombardment all day. Thirteen of our men were buried by one explosion, but all were safely excavated. On the 19th, at 3 a.m., orders for the attack were received. The preliminary bombardment, with help from the Navy, was timed to start at 5.30 a.m., and the infantry were to advance at 7.30 a.m. The 1/4th K.O.S. Borderers were ordered to follow the 1/5th K.O.S.B. along the eastern slopes of Kurd Hill—Lees Hill ridge at 800 yards distance. At 7.15 the Battalion was in position in lines of half companies at four paces extension and 250 yards distance. The order of battle was “A,” “B,” “D,” and “C” Companies (less two platoons), the latter being escort to the artillery, and the Battalion strength was 25 officers and 572 other ranks, allocated as follows:—Battalion Headquarters—Lieut.-Colonel J. M. B. Sanders, M.C., Commanding Officer; Major W. T. Forrest, M.C., Second in Command; Captain J. M. Watson, Adjutant; Lieut. W. N. Alston, Signalling Officer; Lieut. G. J. Brown, Acting Quartermaster; Lieut. J. S. Allan, Intelligence Officer; and Captain J. Howitt, Medical Officer. Other ranks—49.

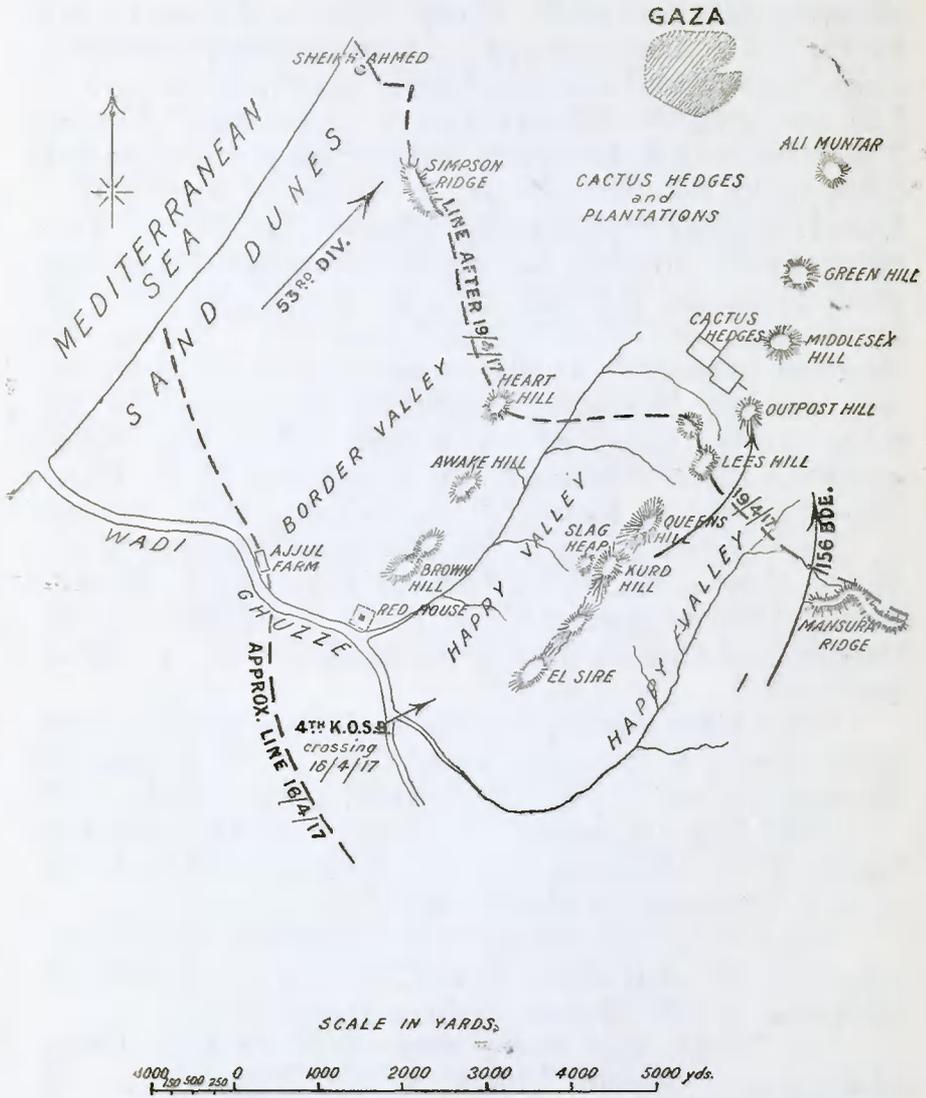
“A” Coy.—Captain R. R. M. Lumgair, O.C. Company; Lieut. J. Elder; Second Lieuts. J. M. Pollok, T. Broomfield, and J. M. Macpherson. Other ranks—158.

“B” Coy.—Captain T. T. Muir, O.C. Coy.; Second Lieuts. R. S. Alexander, W. R. Ovens, J. C. Moore, and J. J. S. Thomson. Other ranks—131.

“D” Coy.—Captain W. F. Cochrane, O.C. Coy.; Lieut. R. B. Anderson; Second Lieuts. A. Ainslie, J. Dickson, and D. Burns. Other ranks—151.

“C” Coy. (less two platoons)—Captain D. Craig, O.C. Coy.; Second Lieuts. G. D. Sempill, L. D. Robertson, and W. Robertson. Other ranks—83.

At 9.30 a.m. the Battalion advanced to Queen’s Hill, and at 11 a.m. “A” and “B” Coys., under Major Forrest, were ordered to proceed to and attack Outpost Hill, which the Turks had retaken, and “D” Coy. was subsequently sent forward to support “A” and “B”



Plan showing advance of 16/4/17 and 19/4/17

Companies in this attack. By half-past twelve all three Companies were involved in the attack, which had been partially successful. By 12.50 p.m. our men had taken the east half of the Outpost Hill redoubt and trenches to the north-east and south-west. The redoubt and trenches were full, and many men of our Battalion were lying in the open unable to get into them. One runner out of a dozen managed to get through with a message to Battalion Headquarters from Lieut. Anderson stating that our men were holding the redoubt, but were suffering much from machine-gun fire, and as a result of this message artillery support was asked for. Later in the afternoon the remainder of "C" Company managed to get to the redoubt with several thousands of rounds of ammunition. The redoubt, however, had to be evacuated at dusk owing to a Turkish enveloping movement; and of the original garrison in the redoubt, numbering 400 all ranks, only three officers (two of whom were suffering from shell-shock) and 30 N.C.O.'s and men, came out. At 6.30 p.m. the 155th Brigade was relieved by the 157th Brigade, and the surviving garrison of the redoubt, along with "C" (reserve) Company, proceeded to bivouacs on Kurd Hill after all possible wounded had been brought in. How terribly the Battalion had suffered in the assault on the redoubt may be judged from the casualties, which amounted to 15 officers and 340 other ranks killed, wounded, and missing. The officers killed were:—Major W. T. Forrest, Captain W. F. Cochrane, Captain R. R. M. Lumgair, Lieut. R. B. Anderson, and Second Lieuts. A. Ainslie and J. C. Moore. The officers wounded were:—Captain T. T. Muir, Lieut. J. Elder, and Second Lieuts. J. M. Macpherson, W. R. Ovens, R. S. Alexander, D. Burns, J. M. Pollok, T. Broomfield, and J. Dickson—the last five mentioned all suffering from shell-shock. Out of 16 officers who took part in the fighting in and around the redoubt, only one came through unscathed, namely, Second Lieut. J. J. S. Thomson of "B" Company. Of the casualties in other ranks, between 40 and 50 were reported killed and missing.

I give herewith an account of the attack written by Second Lieut. (now Captain) T. Broomfield. He writes:—

“ The Battalion, together with the remainder of the Lowland Division, had been lying in the vicinity of Sheik Zowaid, a few hours' march south of Rafa and the frontier line of Palestine, when orders were received to move forward. The mounted troops and 53rd (Welsh) Division, together with the 54th Division, were believed to be moving north of Rafa, and the 52nd Division advanced on March 25th to support them. Few of the men will forget the crossing of the frontier. The Divisional Pipe Band played ‘ Blue Bonnets Over the Border ’ as we passed. After marching all forenoon on the 25th, we had a rest beyond Rafa for a few hours, another in the early hours of the morning of the 26th, and then we were on the road again before dawn. When daylight came the Battalion found itself amongst cactus hedges and orange groves in the village of Khan Yunus, near Beila, in a thick mist. Everywhere there were signs of activity, and huge dumps of shells and rations abounded. By this time we all knew (from rumour) that the attack in front was held up owing to fog. However, the guns soon started well in front. Just before mid-day we halted about three miles south of the Wadi Ghuzee, and, crawling to the ridge, we saw practically the whole battle area. Things seemed to be going very well for a while, and rumour had it that the mounted troops were round Gaza; then we could see our men retiring and shells bursting amongst the stretcher-bearers of the 53rd Division and the retiring troops. Shortly after this we heard our attack had failed. On this occasion our Division was not called upon except to cover the retreat and help to bring in stores, etc., left by the retiring Divisions. During the next few days we dug-in about half-a-mile south of the Wadi Ghuzee, from which place we could see the Turks doing likewise on Ali Muntar and other parts of the line. With the exception of a reconnaissance in force, nothing important took place for a fortnight or so; then we could see that another



A Typical Wadi in the Kefauit Line, Gaza.



Dinner Time behind Mansura Ridge, Palestine.

attack was coming off. Every night the Battalion scouts patrolled the El Sire ridge for about four miles in order to select suitable ground to advance over, and on these occasions used to go over the ground held by the Kurdish lancers in the day-time. These lancers used to shake their lances and snipe at us at hopeless ranges by day, but at night they withdrew behind the Turkish trenches. On the night of April 16th-17th the advance started, and at dawn the Turk found us looking at his positions on Outpost Hill and Mansura Ridge from Kurd Hill. As soon as we were seen at dawn we were heavily shelled. This continued for a day or two, and then on the morning of April 19th the Brigade moved out to the attack, the line of advance being the line of the El Sire ridge, with Ali Muntar standing out distinctly in the north, and evidently strongly held. The 5th R.S.F. were responsible for the left flank, which was open, and our Battalion moved out to support the 5th K.O.S.B., who, to judge from the noise, were meeting with considerable opposition beyond Queen's Hill, between Kurd Hill and Outpost Hill. In a short time we got the order to reinforce, and after doubling about 1500 yards or so we met scattered parties of the other battalions of our Brigade and passed many wounded. In a wadi about 400 yards or so from Outpost Hill the remainder of the Brigade seemed to be held up. It was here, under heavy artillery and rifle fire, that Major Forrest got on the top of the wadi and coolly walked about preparing the men for an assault on the redoubt. When all was ready he valiantly led the charge, and a body of about fifty Turks leaped from a ravine and bolted away in a half-left direction, and these we drove into the hedges on the left slopes of Outpost Hill.

“ From that time I was separated from the other officers of our Battalion, and had only about ten men of various units with whom to look after the left flank. On several occasions bodies of Turks were seen massing in the woods, but these we managed to disperse with the help of a very plucky gunner and the coolness of one of my sergeants—Sergeant A. Murray—who continued to

carry ammunition to the Lewis gun after all the others had been killed or wounded. Just before nightfall a staff officer from our Division crawled out to our position with an orderly from our Battalion who was killed shortly afterwards. The orderly told me that Captain Lumgair, Captain Cochrane, and Lieutenants Anderson, Ainslie, and other officers were killed, and that many had been wounded. We were now under direct fire from a number of machine guns, rifles, minenwerfers, and a battery of artillery. Nearly every man had been killed or wounded, and, in spite of the additional danger of being rushed by the Turks, we were thankful as darkness fell when a few men crawled down a ditch to us and helped to hold the left of the hillside. Lieut. Foote of the R.S.F. arrived in our ditch with Lewis guns, and also Major Crombie of the 5th K.O.S.B., who took over command until we were relieved by the A. & S. Highlanders about midnight.

“ After a difficult march over open ground our mixed party (about 15 men of different battalions), with the two officers aforementioned, reached our Battalion Headquarters on Kurd Hill. Here I found no other officers back except those attached to Battalion H.Q., so I was ordered out to hold an outpost line till morning, and was joined by Lieutenant Mercer when he arrived. Next morning, as I was suffering from contusion, a wound on one of my heels, and shock, I was sent to hospital, where I got a good rest until rejoining the Battalion in June. It was only after getting to hospital that I really knew how heavy our casualties had been. In my opinion the heavy percentage of casualties among officers of our Battalion was due to the prolonged fighting at close quarters, where any officer who seemed to be directing things at all could easily be seen and shot at close range. The most outstanding case of gallantry in the action—and there were many such cases—was that of Major Forrest, who undoubtedly rallied the larger part of the Brigade and led the assault, when, through disorganisation caused by heavy casualties, the troops were held up.”

Further accounts by other officers and men who took part in this bloody battle confirm the view that it was every whit as fierce and terrible as the engagement on the 12th of July, 1915, at Gallipoli. The redoubt was a network of trenches, and the Turks had their machine guns in and around the redoubt in such positions that every movement on the part of our men was met with murderous fire. An interesting account of the attack on the redoubt is herewith given by Lieutenant J. M. Pollok, who writes:—

“ I shall never forget the scene around me during the attack on the redoubt, so gallantly led by Major Forrest. The fire from the enemy’s machine guns was terrific, spelling certain death to nearly all who were in the open. About 20 yards from the redoubt I obtained shelter in a shell-hole for a few minutes, and while lying there I saw Captain Cochrane rush forward and bend over the body of Captain Lumgair, who was lying wounded between the barbed wire and the redoubt trench. He appeared to be just on the point of lifting Captain Lumgair up, when a man near me said—‘ Look at Captain Cochrane; he’ll be killed as sure as fate,’ and these words had scarcely been spoken before I saw Captain Cochrane stagger and fall to the ground. I eventually rushed forward with the Lewis gun team and got into the redoubt. The Turks were holding one half of the circle of the redoubt. Some were within bombing distance, while others were not a hundred yards away, and they were causing great havoc with machine gun and rifle fire, especially from the slope of the hill overlooking the redoubt. Our losses were very heavy, and, as we were badly in need of reinforcements, urgent messages asking for same were repeatedly sent back by runners and by slightly-wounded men. Shortly afterwards Captain Muir sent me a written message stating that he had been badly wounded, and asking for the assistance of an officer at his part of the line. I was on the point of seeing what I could do to render assistance to Captain Muir, when a body of Turks made a determined rush on our part of the redoubt. We repulsed this attack and

chased the Turks back into their part of the line, which we held for about seven hours by means of hand grenades and Lewis guns. We also captured a few prisoners, but eventually the Turk, who greatly outnumbered us, forced Lieutenant Dickson and myself and the few men who remained to retire up the trench which encircled the redoubt, and where our men were holding out under Lieut. Anderson. This would be about 6.30 p.m. Lieut. Anderson had passed a verbal message to Lieut. Dickson ordering us to hold on until dark and then retire, and the latter officer was in the act of passing on the message to me when news came along that Lieut. Anderson had at that moment been killed instantaneously, having been shot through the heart.

“ When darkness came we realised that it was impossible to hold the redoubt in the absence of reinforcements, which were sorely needed, and we therefore decided to retire across the open. The trench we were in was very shallow, and only by lying down was it possible to obtain cover from the hail of bullets which passed over the trench. The men left the trench by ones and twos, and after Lieut. Dickson had gone I was just about to follow him when I heard a man shouting for help. Going along the trench to discover what was wrong, I found one of our men pinned under the dead body of a comrade who had fallen on the top of him. I managed to extricate the man with the help of another soldier. These men left, and I was about to follow them when I recognised the voice of Major Forrest, who was calling for water. I crawled along the trench to where he was lying and gave him all the water that remained in my bottle. Although I could not see him owing to the darkness, he had evidently been very badly wounded, and I propped him up on the side of the trench for the purpose of endeavouring to carry him back, but I realised that the task was hopeless, as his condition was such that he could not be moved. The Turks had evidently seen my movements, and they fired at me from a range of not more than twenty yards. I was quite alone at that time, and as it was my duty to avoid being taken prisoner I felt

obliged to leave the trench, especially as the Turks were practically upon me. How I escaped being killed on getting out of the trench was a miracle, as I was fired upon repeatedly, but through shock and a slight wound I partially lost the power of my legs, and it was very late at night before I was assisted back to the spot where the remainder of the Battalion were resting. I was utterly exhausted, and had tasted no food since 6 a.m. that day."

Mention also falls to be made of the desperate efforts on the part of Lieut. Ovens and Sergeant Waugh to bring Captain Lumgair to safety. Sergeant Waugh had lifted the wounded officer up, when unfortunately the latter was wounded a second time, on this occasion fatally.

On April 24th the following special Order of the Day by Major-General W. E. B. Smith, C.B., C.A.G., 52nd Division, was issued:—

24th April, 1917.

The G.O.C. desires to place on record his keen appreciation of the conduct of the entire Division during the recent operations.

The steadiness, courage, and devotion to duty by all ranks, under very trying conditions, afford proof of a very high standard of discipline and morale. The careful organisation and successful execution of the operation which resulted in the capture of the enemy's advanced position reflect the very greatest credit on all concerned. The gallantry and dogged determination of the 155th Brigade in its attack on Outpost Hill and the capture and recapture of the Redoubt were worthy of the highest traditions of the British Army. The G.O.C. deeply deplores the loss of those gallant comrades and valuable soldiers, who, through devotion to duty, lost their lives during the operations.

(Sgd.) C. A. H. MCLEAN, Lt.-Col.,
A.A. and Q.M.G., 52nd Division.

Brigadier-General J. A. Pollok McCall, commanding the 155th Brigade, in the course of a letter to Lieut. Colonel Haddon, Hawick, wrote:—"The charge of a party composed of all units of the Brigade, so gallantly led by Major Forrest, M.C., was an inspiring sight. Under a terrible fire of artillery, machine-guns, and rifles, they retook the redoubt from which we had been momentarily driven out by concentrated artillery fire."

CHAPTER XI.

THE FALL OF GAZA AND THE BATTLE OF MUGHAR.

The loss of so many officers in the engagement of 19th April, 1917, was such that when the Battalion was re-organised two days later only two officers per company were available. During the next few nights the Battalion was kept busily employed digging the trenches which formed the new line of defence, including the Slag Heap Redoubt, on the completion of which the Battalion was warmly complimented by the G.O.C. 155th Brigade. On the night of May 13th notice was received of an expected Turkish attack, and extra patrols and listening posts were put out, but the night passed quietly. On May 17th Major R. M. Paton, 5th R.S.F., arrived and took over the command of the Battalion, Lieut.-Colonel Sanders having been invalided to hospital. On May 20th the trenches were very much filled up with blown sand, due to a strong windstorm of the previous 24 hours. On this day the Turks were much more exposed than usual, and considerable sniping and Lewis gun firing was engaged in by us. Every day, more or less, to the end of the month the Turks did a certain amount of shelling, but to little purpose.

During the first few days of June life in the trenches was very quiet, especially as at night, owing to the moon, successful patrolling of the enemy's lines could not be carried out. On June 8th Lieut.-Colonel Sanders arrived back from hospital and took over the command of the Battalion from Major Paton. From June 26th to the 30th the Battalion did special training in the assault and consolidation of trenches, and the operations of a scheme carried out on the latter date were observed by the G.O.C. 52nd Division, who expressed himself as highly

pleased with the manner in which the operations were performed. The month of July was a quiet period for the Battalion. On July 23rd the Battalion took over the Goliath Ridge system of redoubts. This defence system consisted of five redoubts, and as a result of a hard week's work by the Battalion the redoubts were greatly strengthened and improved. During August the strength of the Battalion was increased by the arrival of several fresh officers and men, and on September 15th the Battalion secured a new C.O. in Lieut.-Colonel R. Dashwood-Tandy, Lieut.-Colonel Sanders having again been taken to hospital. On September 22nd the Battalion moved up to the firing line and support line trenches. On the night of the 27th the enemy opened a lively bombardment of our front line trenches for about half-an-hour, but very little damage was done. Shortly after dark that night a thunderstorm broke over us, followed by a heavy downpour of rain—practically the first rain we had had since leaving El Arish in January. During the next few days our guns were very active, bombarding the Turkish trenches, sometimes continuously for twenty-four hours, but very little enemy shelling was experienced in our sector.

The morning of November 1st saw our artillery fire increase in intensity, and under cover of a terrific bombardment the 156th Brigade attacked and captured Umbrella Hill. The enemy's batteries replied along our whole line, the bombardments exceeding by far any that we had experienced on the Gallipoli Peninsula. Next day our batteries heavily bombarded the enemy's line from the El Arish redoubt to the sea, supported by machine gun fire, and the attacking forces moved out from our line and took up attacking formation in the rear of the barrage. At 3.30 a.m. the attack was launched along the whole front. The enemy artillery continued to bombard our front and support trenches, but our casualties were only two men wounded, and by 10.30 p.m. the artillery had quietened down, and the situation became normal. On the following day (November 3) it was learned that the 54th Division had captured two

lines of enemy trenches on a front extending from Umbrella Hill to Sheikh Hasan, and that the line was fairly well consolidated. By November 5th the whole of the defensive system at Gaza was in British hands. Early on November 7th the enemy were reported to be evacuating Gaza. On the morning of the 8th the Battalion moved off up the coast to a point due west of Burberah. The Battalion came under heavy artillery fire, and deployed and moved up the hills to the east in support of the 1/5th K.O.S.B. The Battalion continued to advance slowly all day as Brigade Reserve, the objective being north of the village of Herbieh. In the course of the afternoon the enemy delivered a determined counter-attack, but it was driven off. "A," "B," and "D" Companies took up outpost positions with the 1/5th K.O.S.B. on our right, and the 1/5th R.S.F. on our left, and "C" Company as Brigade Reserve. Our casualties on the 8th were one officer (Lieut. and Act.-Qr.-Mr. G. J. Brown) seriously wounded.

Next day the Battalion moved to a position one mile north-east of Herbieh village, and on November 11th, the Battalion, passing Burberah, arrived at El Mejel with the rest of the Brigade, and took up its position on the outpost line. On the 12th, the Battalion did a march of 15 miles to a position on the main road east of Khurbet Lezra, after a halt on the way at Estdud. On November 13th, the Battalion left its outpost position, and marched 1500 yards in artillery formation on a two company frontage with two companies in support, "A" and "D" Companies, commanded by Captains Fairgrieve and Allan respectively, being in front, and "B." and "C," commanded by Major Locke and Captain Laing respectively, in support. On the high ground 2500 yards due south of Yebnah, the formation was changed to widely extended lines of platoons, and the Battalion moved forward in eight waves towards its objective—the village of Mugar. At 10.30 a.m. the enemy opened very heavy machine gun fire, and sent over much high explosive and shrapnel, but in spite of this the Battalion advanced to within 400 yards of the village, taking up

positions in the Wadi Jamus, and Wadi Shellel el Ghor near an old well, and behind Khurbet Hebra. The Battalion was reinforced on the right by the 1/5th K.O.S.B. Every possible man was required for the attack, and by 2 p.m. the Headquarters' staffs of the 4th and 5th Battalions K.O.S.B. had moved up to the firing line. At 3.45 p.m. the attack was launched. The Battalion advanced by rushes, gallantly led by Colonel Tandy, while the 6th Mounted Brigade charged on our left flank through heavy machine gun fire, and reached the high ground north of the village. The attack was entirely successful, thanks to the wonderful spirit and dash of our men. It was a case of "all in," Brigadier-General Pollok-McCall being well to the fore with a rifle and bayonet, and by 4.45 p.m. the village was captured and consolidated, and the cavalry continued to pursue the enemy, who were in full retreat. In the course of the advance a valuable piece of work was performed by L.-Cpl. A. Ramsay, who, with his Lewis gun, was successful in silencing a troublesome Turkish machine gun which was causing many casualties amongst our men. After this gun was silenced, Captain Laing, R.-S.-M. Murray, L.-Cpl. Ramsay, and three privates went up the hill-side and captured about forty Turks, including one officer. These Turks, who were hiding in a quarry, had thrown away their rifles and ammunition and surrendered in a body.

Parties from our Battalion were thereafter detailed to hunt for snipers who were still hiding in the village. Our Battalion took altogether over 300 prisoners and handed them over to the cavalry. In the evening the Battalion was re-organised and took up its position on the outpost line for the night.

While the 4th and 5th K.O.S. Borderers had been busy capturing the village of Mughar, the Royal Scots Fusiliers of our Brigade had worked their way into Katrah by a series of flank attacks, and as the captures at Katrah included a Turkish infantry battalion, two field guns, and twenty-six machine guns, the 155th Brigade had good reason to feel proud of its achievements.

The casualties of the 1/4th K.O.S.B. in this engagement were:—Officers killed, 3—Captain and Adj. J. M. Watson, Second Lieut. L. D. Robertson and Second Lieut. J. Wood, while Captain A. P. Nimmo died of wounds shortly afterwards at El Arish.

Officers wounded, 9—Major R. W. Sharpe, Captain A. Fairgrieve, Captain J. S. Allan, Lieut. G. D. Sempill, and Second Lieuts. R. Bell, A. W. Harvie, B. D. Leslie, H. M. Ross, and R. Graham.

Other ranks killed numbered 30; missing, 1; wounded, 138—giving total casualties in officers and men as 182.

The following account of the battle of Mughar is given by Captain J. S. Allan, who was wounded in the engagement. He writes:—

“ It was in the afternoon of November 12th that the Battalion, after a very heavy and trying march, arrived at the historic small town of Esdud, where we had some food and made any necessary change of footgear. Colonel Tandy called the officers together and explained that a night’s march would be necessary, as it was desirable to get forward to the retiring enemy and try to cut them off. The N.C.O.’s and men were then informed of the scheme, after which the order was given to discard packs, and take nothing except ‘battle order.’ At this time—away inland—another brigade could be seen in conflict with the Turks, and cavalry were pushing forward along the coastal sector. Darkness had set in before we commenced our march. I shall never forget that march. The congestion of traffic in the narrow streets of the village—if one could call them streets—was very great, and it was a long time before we got clear of the town, but eventually we got into the open. It was a dreary march, no one being allowed to speak except in a whisper. At about midnight we arrived at our rendezvous, where the Battalion was formed into a semi-circle and the companies began to dig in with entrenching tools. There was no chance of any sleep, as we had no blankets and the cold was intense, while everyone had to ‘stand to’ before daybreak. When dawn came (November 13th)

we found ourselves on the reverse side of a gradually sloping hill, with no enemy to be seen. A hurried meal was prepared, after which the Battalion got ready for another move, and I may add here that great credit is due to the Battalion's transport, under Lieut. J. B. Stewart, for the manner in which it kept the unit supplied while on the move from Gaza. The Battalion was formed into artillery formation and marched nearly to the top of the hill, where our objective—the village of El Mughar—was pointed out. The Companies were then split up into smaller artillery formations, and the advance was made towards the village, which stood on a ridge of hills.

“ ‘ D ’ Company was the extreme left Company, and had to advance till the left of the Company line came to a small clump of trees where there was a small building, and there await orders for the final attack. By this time the Battalion was in extended order. It was a beautiful, peaceful, sunny morning. On the surrounding hillsides sheep and goats could be seen grazing and birds were whistling. Everything appeared so calm, and it was difficult to believe we were about to be engaged in battle. Keeping the village as our objective, we drew nearer, when it was possible to discern the enemy feverishly ‘ digging in ’ in front of the village and along the top of the ridges on either side. On approaching to between 1200 and 1500 yards’ distance from the village, machine gun, rifle, and artillery fire were opened upon us—a sudden and dramatic change being wrought upon the perfect calm of the morning. The enemy fire was falling short, and all along the line in front dust was rising. On we went in short, successive dashes through the barrage to our allotted position. ‘ B ’ Company had come up this time and taken up its position along with ‘ D ’ Company. A good many casualties had already occurred, Sergeant Craig being among the first to be killed whilst gallantly leading his Lewis gun section. We were subjected to enemy fire during the whole of the day, and it was almost impossible to secure cover by ‘ digging in ’ owing to the hard, rocky nature of the

ground. During this period there was opportunity for reconnaissance, and Captain A. P. Nimmo went away to the left flank to reconnoitre, but could not get in touch with anyone. When coming back he was wounded in one of his fingers, but nevertheless continued on duty. A message giving information regarding the enemy positions was gallantly taken back across the open by Lieut. D. Burns, and splendid work was also done during the day by Lieuts. Ross, Wilson, and Wood.

“Between 3.30 and 4 p.m. our cavalry, consisting chiefly of Dorset and Somerset Yeomanry, appeared on our left flank, and were getting into position to charge and take the hill on the left of the village. It was an inspiring sight to see the lines of horsemen coming across the open at top speed. Meanwhile our Battalion kept up a heavy supporting fire. On the cavalry charged. They had to cross a deep gully at the foot of the hill, but this obstacle was overcome, and they were soon to be observed tearing up the hill, where they captured the position and took many prisoners. It was in this magnificent charge that Captain Neil Primrose lost his life.

“At this point Lieut. Burns arrived with a message from Battalion Headquarters ordering us to continue the advance (along with the 1/5th K.O.S.B.) and take the village, and accordingly word was passed along the line to that effect. The troops advanced steadily in lines across the deep gully already referred to, charged through the gardens on the slopes of the hill, and, in spite of stubborn resistance on the part of the enemy, captured the village, taking numerous prisoners in doing so. The cavalry gave us good supporting fire from the hill on the left flank, while our artillery also rendered us valuable support. After crossing the gully a party of us doubled forward to a cactus hedge at the foot of one of the village gardens, and opened fire on the Turks, who were ensconced at the top of the garden, and it was at this time that Lieut. Wood was killed. Captain Nimmo was again wounded, this time very badly. Lieut. Graham was wounded in the leg, and while lying on the ground was again wounded in the shoulder. Lieut. Ross

was also wounded in the leg, and I was wounded in the arm—all these casualties occurring in quick succession as the result of rifle or machine gun fire. At this time Private Fox of 'D' Company fell mortally wounded, and whilst endeavouring to bandage his wound he spoke to me with his last breath—one of the many touching incidents that occurred amidst the roar of battle, and one that I shall never forget. It was indeed a memorable charge. Our men without exception were splendid. The enemy did not yield the village without putting up a stiff fight, but by 5 p.m. the victory was complete. Very soon the sun sank behind the hills and the dark mantle of night crept down upon the battlefield, shrouding the agony and the misery."

CHAPTER XII.

THE CROSSING OF THE RIVER AUJA.

On November 18th the Battalion moved with the Brigade to El Ramleh and next day occupied Annabeh without opposition. On the 20th the Battalion arrived at Berfilya. The surrounding country was very hilly and rocky, and parties from our Battalion were employed on repairing the roads, which were in a very bad state owing to a very heavy downpour of rain which lasted four hours. As the downpour was accompanied by a considerable drop in the temperature, our men, who had neither overcoats nor blankets, suffered considerably, especially as but a few hours previous to the rainfall they had been sweltering in intense heat. On the 22nd the Battalion joined the rest of the Brigade at Beit Likia and encamped for the night. On the 23rd, while moving into the Wadi Amir, north-east of Biddu, the Battalion came under heavy shell fire, two other ranks being killed and eighteen wounded. On the 24th the 5th K.O.S.B. and 5th R.S.F., with our Battalion in support, were ordered to attack and capture El Jib, the old Gibeon of Biblical fame, which was strongly held by the enemy, this action taking place over the same ground on which the five kings were defeated. We were very heavily shelled and there was also very heavy machine gun fire from the front and left flank, and little headway could be made. Our troops reached an orchard about 400 yards from the village when orders to retire were received and the action was accordingly broken off, the Battalion returning to the camping area about one and a half miles south-west of El Kubeibeh. In this abortive attack on El Jib Second-Lieut. A. N. Wilson and two other ranks were killed and twenty other ranks wounded.

On November 28th the Battalion moved through Beit Sira and came under very heavy machine gun fire from the ridges in front of Suffa. The Battalion conse-

quently deployed for action, taking up its position among the rocks and ridges. The Turks held a commanding position, and before our men could deploy a number of casualties occurred. All day we fought with the Turks, who were evidently trying to get astride the Ramleh-Kubeibeh track, which, had they succeeded, would have been a tremendous handicap to our forces in the hills. However, thanks mainly to the good work of our artillery, the Turks must have lost very heavily. In fact, a later report given by a captured Turkish officer stated that the Turkish forces were very seriously depleted by this fight. "C" Company at the beginning of the attack held a commanding ridge from which position the Lewis gunners put several enemy machine guns out of action at a range of from 500 to 700 yards, Pte. (afterwards Corpl.) Angus doing great work in this connection. This ridge was ultimately vacated, when "C" Company was ordered back to lie in support to the Battalion. It was about this time that Major Locke was badly wounded in the hip, and Captain (now Major) P. L. P. Laing took his place as second in command of the Battalion. Orders were received to prolong the line on the left of the 1/7th Royal Scots, and by 8 p.m. the Battalion was reported in position for the night.

This surprise attack by the Turks was of a very determined character, and in repulsing the enemy we had one officer (Lieut. W. M. Mercer) and seven men killed, while Major H. W. Locke and twenty other ranks were wounded. Next day the enemy subjected us to very heavy machine gun fire, and while engaged on reconnaissance work Captain Laing had his horse shot, but on the 30th all was quiet in our part of the line, and having been relieved, the Battalion encamped for the night south-west of Beit Sira.

On December 2nd the Battalion, having passed the night near Anwas, moved to Ramleh, and spent several days there resting and equipping. It is a noteworthy fact that in all the marching from Mughar, through the hills, round Jerusalem and back to Ramleh, not a man of the Battalion fell out from fatigue, although in many cases



1/4th Bn. K.O.S.B. entering Beit Likia the day before the action there.



Well near Ramleh, December, 1917. Note tramp-like appearance of men after the long advance.

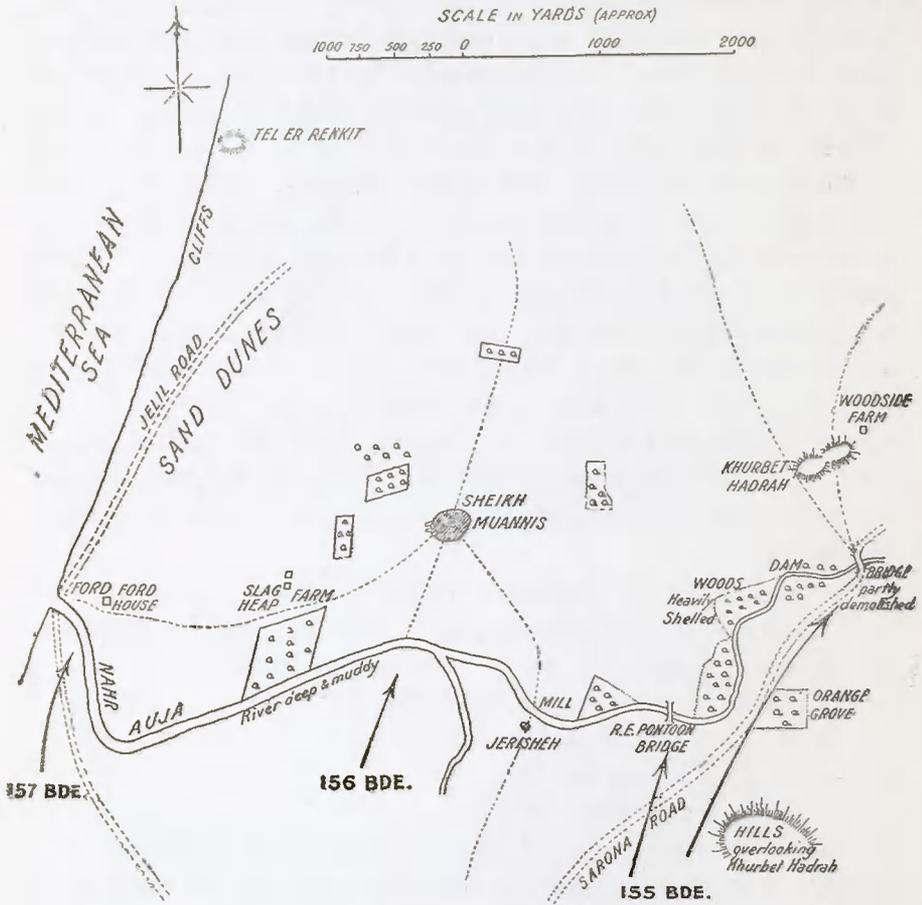


The Battalion resting at Beit Anan after the action at El Jib, near Jerusalem.

the men's boots were hanging in pieces, some having their boots tied round with string to keep the soles on. Our medical officer considered this an extraordinary feat of endurance. On December 6th the Battalion relieved the 7th Australian Light Horse in position north-east of Jaffa, in the vicinity of the Almond Grove. At night rain fell heavily and all next day, making things very uncomfortable for our men. Fortunately, by the 11th the weather had cleared and the sun shone brightly once more. While in this part of the line the enemy subjected us to considerable shelling, but our casualties were light and all ranks were in good heart over the good news of the surrender of Jerusalem and of General Allenby's official entry into the city on the 11th. On the 14th, following a heavy bombardment by our artillery, the enemy retaliated with heavy shell fire, but our casualties were nil. On the 19th Lieut.-Colonel Tandy, Captain L. P. Cathels, Second Lieut. D. Burns, and 200 other ranks from the Battalion proceeded to Jaffa as Brigade representatives in connection with the presentation of medals as follows:—

- Captain A. P. Nimmo, M.C. (died of wounds).
- Captain A. Fairgrieve, M.C. (in hospital wounded).
- Second Lieut. D. A. R. Cuthbert, M.C.
- C.S.M. T. G. Potter, D.C.M.
- Lce.-Cpl. A. Ramsay, M.M.
- Pte. A. Angus, M.M.
- Pte. T. Fairbairn, M.M.
- Pte. A. McEwan, M.M. (in hospital wounded).

On December 19th the weather was very stormy, and on the 20th rain fell heavily all day. At 5.30 p.m. on that date the Battalion moved off to a position near some caves in reserve to our Brigade, who were to attack and capture Kerbet Hadrah on the other side of the river Auja. The final touches to the preparations for the surprise passage of the river Auja—an event which was to mark the final advance of the 52nd Division in Palestine—were now being made. Experiments with model rafts were carried out on a reservoir near Jaffa, and repre-



Plan showing approximate positions of 52nd (Lowland) Division at crossing of the river Auja, December, 1917.

representatives from the various units attended there to make themselves familiar with the method of using the rafts, and the night of December 20th saw the Battalion engaged in carrying pontoons and coracles to the river. These had been made and concealed in orange groves. The orange groves were a feature of the Jaffa district, and previous to the war were mainly owned by Germans. As the crop lasts for several months, from November onwards, our men had an unlimited supply of beautiful ripe oranges, very much superior in quality to those sold in the home market. In ordinary times 20 of these oranges could be obtained in Jaffa for $2\frac{1}{2}$ d.

The coracles were capable of carrying twenty men apiece. The crossing of the river was, however, fraught with difficulties, as the Auja was much swollen by the recent heavy rains and was flowing swiftly, while the banks of the river were little better than mud swamps, and few fords could be found. On the high ground beyond, overlooking the open stretch of country through which the river flowed, the enemy was strongly entrenched, but as the weather was so bad and as the river was more or less in spate, he evidently had no knowledge of our intentions until about midnight, when he opened a sharp bombardment on the orange grove, greatly impeding the carrying of the rafts. Even without the shelling, the carrying of rafts was a difficult matter. The wood was soaked by rain and was in consequence very heavy, and twenty men at least were required to lift each raft. The lanes leading to the river bank were just wide enough to permit a raft to be carried down, while the cactus hedges and the darkness of the night added to the difficulty of the task. All night, however, our Battalion worked hard on fatigues, giving every assistance to the engineers. The canvas rafts were lashed together to form a bridge, and over this bridge the artillery and most of the infantry crossed, making as little noise as possible. Other infantry crossed in the coracles and a few—greatly daring—waded across breast deep at possible fords. The Turks were taken by surprise, and post after post was rushed at the point of the bayonet without a shot being fired.

The 155th Brigade (less 1/4th K.O.S.B.) were among the troops which successfully crossed the Auja on the night of the 20th, and they duly attained their objective—the capture of Kerbet Hadrah. Our Battalion, however, having been engaged in carrying pontoons, etc., did not cross until the morning of the 21st, when it took over the line at Kerbet Hadrah. “The successful crossing of the Nahr el Auja,” says General Sir Edmund Allenby in his dispatch dated September 18, 1918, “reflected great credit on the 52nd (Lowland) Division. It involved considerable preparation, the details of which were thought out with care and precision. The sodden state of the ground, and, on the night of the crossing, the swollen state of the river, added to the difficulties, yet by dawn the whole of the infantry had crossed. The fact that the enemy were taken by surprise and that all resistance was overcome with the bayonet without a shot being fired, bears testimony to the discipline of this Division. Eleven officers, including two battalion commanders, and 305 other ranks, and ten machine guns were captured in this operation.”

After taking over the line we were on the 21st subjected to very heavy shelling all day, but only two casualties resulted. On the 22nd the Battalion moved off in artillery formation with the rest of the Brigade to capture three objectives, namely, Khurbet-es-Sualimiyeh, to be taken by the 5th R.S.F.; Tel el Mukhmar, the 4th K.O.S.B.'s main objective; and Khurbet Wabsah, to be taken by the 4th K.O.S.B. and 4th and 5th R.S.F. The 5th K.O.S.B. acted as right flank guard. All objectives were carried with little or no opposition, the Turks evacuating one position after another in quick succession, and the Battalion took up its position north-west of Tel el Mukhmar. The wet weather still continued, and throughout Christmas Day the rain fell in torrents, making all of us very miserable, but fortunately by next morning the weather had considerably improved. From December 26th to the end of the month the Battalion was busily engaged in digging and wiring the new line, good progress being made.

On January 1st, 1918, rain fell heavily again, and next morning one of our posts at Boche Wood was attacked by a large enemy patrol, which was driven off. This proved to be the Battalion's first encounter with a German battalion, namely, the 701st Infantry Regiment. We took a few prisoners and suffered in this skirmish three casualties. As a result of the rain which continued to fall the river Auja was in heavy flood on January 7th, and as on that day our transport and ration party under the direction of Lieut. J. B. Stewart had to cross the river twice waist deep, great credit is due to the drivers for their work on that occasion. One driver of another unit was drowned. To the end of January nothing of importance occurred, and though our artillery was very active, the enemy's was, on the whole, very quiet. On January 30th the Battalion moved to Sarona and occupied billets in the houses there, which were exceedingly comfortable, though the sudden change from sleeping in the open to sleeping indoors caused almost everyone to suffer from colds. The change, however, was greatly appreciated by all ranks after the trying experiences they had undergone. At Sarona during the first fortnight of February the Battalion was mainly engaged in a scheme of training and musketry practice. On the 14th the Battalion relieved the 1/7th H.L.I as right reserve battalion on the left sector of the 52nd Division's line. While in this sector nothing of importance occurred until the night of the 26th, when one of our patrols, under Lieut. H. O. Jones, was suddenly engaged by the enemy and came under heavy rifle and machine gun fire. Our patrol withdrew, two of our men being wounded and two being taken prisoners. The 1st of March saw the Battalion in position east of Jelil, and except on the 10th, when the enemy heavily bombarded the Battalion area for an hour, a very quiet time was spent. On March 15th the Battalion moved to the reserve area at Arsuf, north of Jelil. Arsuf is a tiny village on the coast, and marked the furthest point in Palestine reached by the Battalion. Towards the end of the month route marches were frequent, and the general

impression among all ranks now was that the Battalion, having finished its work in Palestine, was being hardened-up for strenuous duties in another theatre of war. On March 29th the Battalion was relieved by the 25th Rifles (Punjabis), and returned to Sarona, where next day we received a draft of five new officers, and owing to the recent losses they were indeed sorely needed. At Sarona we enjoyed two days' rest prior to going to France with our Division. The 4th K.O.S. Borderers had as a battalion played a great part in the conquest of Palestine, as a summary of its advance bears witness. All the way from Kantara the Battalion had been with the 52nd Division in the great and triumphant advance. The extent of the ground covered may be judged by a rough survey of the route, viz.:—From Kantara to Romani, 25 miles, over very soft sand; from Romani to El Arish, about 75 miles, also over very soft sand and in very trying weather; from El Arish to Gaza, a distance of 50 miles, with the going rather better; from Gaza to Ramleh the Battalion had to fight its way over a distance of practically 50 miles, as it did not go by any means as the crow flies; from Ramleh to the outskirts of Jerusalem, a further 20 miles, half of this distance being stiff mountain climbing; then followed a 20 miles' trek back to Ramleh with fighting on the way. The next move from Ramleh to the banks of the river Auja was 14 miles, and, finally, the advance to Arsuf, 8 miles—making the total distance covered by the Battalion in the advance fully 260 miles—a truly splendid achievement. The hardships suffered by the Battalion had been very great and the casualties severe, but it was not quite all work and no play with our officers and men, and some good stories could be told about the lighter side of things. When the Battalion was stationed at Kantara a certain amount of fishing was done in the canal, the fish caught being mullet, which in appearance were not unlike grayling. The natives caught most of their fish by means of a net, which, on being thrown from the hand, spread out like a fan over a considerable area of water, and, after being allowed to sink,

was drawn in. The method of fishing was such as was employed in the East in the earliest times, and as there was always a great demand for the captured fish the native fishermen did good business.

In Lieut. Ainslie, a very gallant officer who was killed on April 19th, 1917, the Battalion possessed a keen entomologist, who, in the course of his journey through the desert, made a most wonderful collection of butterflies, moths, beetles, etc. If bird and insect life was interesting on the Gallipoli Peninsula, where thrushes, crows, wagtails, hawks, magpies, wild duck, quails, sand martins, vultures, and many other kinds of birds were to be seen, it was certainly equally interesting in Egypt and Palestine. Around Gaza, for instance, scorpions and centipedes were very numerous, several of our men being badly bitten and stung by them. Quail were also very numerous before the barley was cut or trampled down at Gaza, and several of our officers went quail shooting. In the sea at Arsuf we used to get a fair supply of fish by bombing and then plunging in naked and catching the fish as they floated about stunned by the explosions. A matter of interest after the crossing of the Auja was the extraordinary flights of migratory starlings. Every evening they would fly over—columns of them—with here and there a hawk diving at them. As a method of defence the starlings would all flock together and rise almost in a solid pillar to meet the hawk, and seldom, if ever, did he conquer. The men used to turn out of their bivouacs and watch these strange aerial contests until darkness fell. And here are a few good stories. While lying in the line near Arsuf we used to get good fox-hunting. On one occasion the horsemen (R.S.F.) rode right through the posts into No Man's Land. This incident was very humorously referred to by a major of the R.S.F. in the course of an article in the Army paper, "The Palestine News." An extract from the article runs thus:—"Fox was raised in Jelil covert, and after skirting Tandy's earths (our dug-outs) led the field through heavy wire on to ground which is at present under dispute between Tandy and his neighbour Abdul."

On one occasion when the Battalion was crossing the desert during a very hot and trying march one of our men was heard to say—"Wullie, they can say what they like, but I'll bate Napoleon didnae mairch twenty-five miles a day up here in an iron waiskit." He had evidently got confused between Napoleon and King Richard, both of whom had covered the ground we were going over, and the padre was constantly telling the men about this and that Napoleon had done over 25 miles a day.

For a long time we got no jam—just marmalade day after day, and the Army Service Corps' excuse was that a ship load of jam had been submarined, but that the marmalade ship had got through. It was at the time of this shortage of jam that one of our officers overheard one of our men say—"If Kitchener had been in a marmalade boat he wudnae have been droon'd."

On another occasion a man, after taking a pull at his water bottle, was heard to say—"Jock, there must hae been an awfu' lot o' fishers oot in the sweet water canal; a' can taste their waders." It may be mentioned that all our water was pumped up the desert from the sweet water canal at Kantara, and often the water tasted of rubber piping and chloride of lime.



The day after crossing the River Auja. Note the oranges,
which were very plentiful.



After a few minutes rain near Sheik Ballutah, January, 1918.

CHAPTER XIII.

ON THE WESTERN FRONT.

On April 4th, 1918, the Battalion moved to Ludd station, entrained there, and arrived at Kantara at 2 o'clock the following morning—the journey taking 14 hours. Twelve hours later the Battalion entrained for Alexandria, and next morning embarked on the s.s. "Malwa," Colonel Tandy being appointed O.C. Troops, and Captain and Adjutant W. N. Alston ship's Adjutant. The transport lay in the harbour for several days, and did not sail until April 11th. Marseilles was reached on the morning of the 17th, and the Battalion disembarked and marched to Musso Camp. On the 19th the Battalion again entrained, arrived at Noyelles on the 22nd, and by that afternoon got settled down in the pretty village of Favieres, where comfortable billets were obtained. Here a week was spent in equipping and training, and on the 29th a move was made to Aire, where the French Cavalry Barracks were occupied by our men.

At Aire hard training was begun, but by May 7th the Battalion was on the move once more, and late that night arrived at Neuville St Vaast. On the following day the Battalion proceeded to Vimy Ridge and relieved the 6th Battalion Black Watch in the trenches, "C" and "D" Coys. going into the line, with "A" and "B" Coys. in support. The Battalion had not been long in the trenches before casualties occurred, three men being wounded by shrapnel. At this time our artillery was very active, and on the 11th we got an idea of what German shell fire was like, our front line that day being very heavily shelled for fully an hour. The Battalion occupied the line until the night of May 15th, when it was relieved, and returned to Neuville St Vaast, where a few days were spent in bathing, cleaning, resting, and training until the 19th, when we moved to Ottawa Camp at

Mont St Eloi. Here lectures on various matters were given and musketry practice and specialist training engaged in. On the 24th the Battalion moved up to the reserve sector of the line again, and relieved the 1/6th H.L.I., and three days later we had our first experience of enemy gas shells, but suffered no casualties. On June 2nd the Battalion relieved the 4th R.S.F. in the line, and on this occasion we had a pretty rough time of it. The enemy discharged gas, and subjected our line to very heavy shelling—much heavier than anything we had experienced at Gallipoli. On June 10th three of our officers and two platoons raided the enemy front line, which was found to be unoccupied, the party returning without suffering casualties. Next day the Battalion was relieved, and returned to Pendu Camp, Mont St Eloi, where we remained until the 20th, when we relieved the 5th A. and S. H. in the support line. While in the support line much work was done in repairing and erecting wire at night in front of our areas. On June 28th the Battalion took over new positions in the centre of the line. Nothing of much importance occurred until the night of July 5th, when, the wind being favourable, 540 cylinders were projected at 11 p.m. on Arleux Loop, which caused the enemy to put up numerous flares, and fires were observed to have broken out at various parts of his line. Two nights later, about midnight, enemy shelling set the artillery dump in the area of our Battalion Headquarters on fire, but, thanks to the personnel of Headquarters, the fire was extinguished in thirty minutes. On July 8th we were relieved and proceeded to Fraser Camp, Mont St Eloi, in motor lorries, and here we remained until the 17th, when we took over the support line trenches in Brown Line, the trenches being very muddy owing to heavy rain, and considerable time had to be spent in clearing the water out of them.

Subsequently, after a respite at Camblain l' Abbe, the Battalion proceeded to the trenches in the Willerval area, where we relieved the 50th Canadian Regiment, the boundaries being "Western Road" and "Tired Alley." While in this part of the line some exciting work was

experienced by our night patrols. On the night of August 6th the enemy put down a barrage on the "B" Company area, and a Boche raiding party of two officers and about 40 other ranks attempted to rush our post at the junction of "Plumer Road" and "Tired Alley." They were repulsed, leaving one officer and four men killed and two prisoners. We had eight N.C.O.'s and men wounded, while Sergt. Coonie, who had done splendid work with the Battalion at Gallipoli and elsewhere, was taken prisoner. If I remember rightly, this was the N.C.O. who, when the Battalion was vacating the Gallipoli trenches for good on the last night of the year 1915, was heard to say—"A've seen naething wrang wi' the life oot here. It's a damned sight better life than the barrack square dreel that ye're gaun tae noo, mate! Mark ma words! "

Two days later the Battalion area at Willerval was shelled with mustard gas shells, but we suffered no casualties, and after a few days at Thelus, Roclincourt, and Mont St Eloi, the Battalion marched to Caucourt. After a short rest the Battalion proceeded south through Habarq and Gouy-en-Artois to Bretoncourt, where we arrived on August 23rd. During the next two days we knew that things were happening, as a tremendous "racket" was going on up the line. We could see the gunners limbering-up for the advance across the Arras railway at Fichewx. Shells were bursting on the ridges around Henin, but gradually the artillery fire lifted to the ridges behind Henin and on to Henin Hill. Our turn to move duly came, and about 3 p.m. on August 26th the Battalion moved out in artillery formation to attack the switch of the Hindenburg Line, "A" and "B" Coys. leading. After entering the line the Battalion bombed its way south-east up the slopes of Henin Hill, which was apparently now held only by machine gunners. The German heavy artillery worried us considerably, but did not manage to get many direct hits on the trenches along which we proceeded. After reaching the dried-up bed of the Cojeul river our men pushed their way up the hill. The attack was a very fine one, right across the

open, and was well led. Having got so far with fairly light casualties, the Battalion got a rough time from trench mortars farther up the hill. Towards dark the Canadians joined hands with us after having carried out a successful sweeping movement on our left. Evidently Henin Hill had been reported as clear of the enemy by now, but such was not the case. Fortunately, the attack at dawn next day by the 157th Brigade pushed the Germans right off the hill, otherwise the position might have been serious. This attack by the 157th Brigade was pretty tough work, as could be seen later from the number of dead lying about at all the barricades in the trenches. During this engagement one officer (Second Lieut. J. A. Walker, R.S.F., attached) was killed, but the casualties amongst other ranks of our Battalion were light. On August 28th the Battalion was relieved, and after two days rest at Mercatel marched to Bullecourt and took over trenches there from the London Scottish, Major P. L. P. Laing taking over temporary command of the Battalion from Lieut.-Colonel Tandy, who that day left the Battalion, much to the regret of all ranks.

Late on the following afternoon (September 1st) the Battalion formed up in Bullecourt trench ready for the attack. The massing for the attack was spotted by the enemy's artillery, and, as a result, our trench was heavily shelled, Second-Lieut. Brown and four other ranks being wounded during the shelling. At 5.55 p.m. our barrage opened on Tank Avenue, and the Battalion immediately went over the parapet, "B" and "C" Companies leading, with "D" Company as "moppers-up" and "A" Company in reserve. The Battalion crossed Tank Avenue, and while doing so our right flank experienced heavy machine gun fire, which was so severe that the advance was held up, and as darkness came on, the troops were withdrawn from in front of Tank Avenue, which was then manned and the trench consolidated. While the work of consolidation was being carried out, the enemy put over sneezing and mustard gas. During the advance Lieut. E. C. R. Hamilton-Johnston, O.C. "B" Company (attached from 2nd Bat. K.O.S.B.), was killed,

and the following officers were wounded:—Second-Lieuts. J. D. Pollok, G. Manby, J. Bryson, T. Burrell, Munro, Grey, and Cassidy, the two last-named being attached from the H.L.I. The casualties among the rank and file were:—Killed, 24; missing, 2; wounded, 104; giving total casualties among officers and men as 138.

The Battalion remained in Tank Avenue all night, and next day was organised into two companies, "A" and "B" becoming "X" Company, and "C" and "D" "Y" Company. On September 3rd the Battalion marched via Sunken Road to the Hindenburg Line, and a patrol was sent to clear the village of Queant. On the 7th the Battalion left the trenches, and, crossing the Hirondelle railway, marched via Noreuil, Longatte, and Ecoust to near Croisselles, where it was re-organised into four companies. On the 9th Lieut.-Colonel E. C. Hill-Whitson took over the command of the Battalion, and a spell of training was carried on until September 15th, when the Battalion moved forward to Moeuvres, where more heavy fighting was experienced. The march was considerably delayed owing to bombing by enemy aircraft. During the night we relieved the 2/5th Lancs., and had a very unpleasant time, as the enemy was sending over much gas, and this, of course, necessitated the wearing of gas masks. There was no fixed line, and posts had to be established in and around the ruins of the village. The Battalion we relieved had no very clear idea of where the Germans were. On the right of "A" Coy. was the Guards Brigade, and opposite us were the Prussian Guards. The enemy seemed to have massed a fair quantity of artillery in front of us (to bar the way to Cambrai, it was said). One very rough spot was the roadside near the broken bridge over the Canal du Nord. This point was swept by the enemy's machine guns at about 100 yards range, and as the road had to be frequently crossed, the discomfort can be readily imagined. The trenches we occupied gave little protection, and we sustained a number of casualties through sniping. At night bright moonlight prevailed, and it was difficult to keep out of sight of the enemy. About 6 p.m. on the

night of September 17th the Germans attacked after a heavy barrage and forced our two left companies to retire, but the two companies on the right held their positions and repulsed the enemy. During this attack by the Germans Captain A. W. Harvie and Second.-Lieut J. Dickson were wounded.

Further fierce fighting took place on the night of September 19th, when our Brigade attacked Moeuvres, "A" Company being in reserve to the 1/4th R.S.F., while "B" and "C," which had been formed into one Company under Captain Sempill, furnished carrying parties all night to the 1/4th R.S.F. "D" Company assisted the 1/5th R.S.F. The attack was successful, and the village was captured, but during the night the enemy recaptured Moeuvres. At 5 o'clock next morning "A" Company made a determined attack and reached the canal, but met with such opposition that they were pushed back, and latterly assisted the 1/4th R.S.F. to hold the position which had been taken up. That night our Brigade was relieved by the 156th Brigade, but on the night of September 23rd-24th our Battalion returned to the trenches and relieved the 1/7th Royal Scots. During the next few days severe fighting was engaged in. Twice the Germans rushed and captured one of our positions, and twice we drove them back, ultimately getting the position re-established. Moeuvres was finally captured on September 27th, and on the last day of the month the Battalion was ready for a rest, and marched to Graincourt on the way to Cambrai, but our troubles were not yet over, as after leaving Graincourt on October 1st the road along which the column marched was heavily shelled, and bombs were dropped by enemy aeroplane, while very heavy artillery and machine gun fire was experienced as the Battalion was taking up its position near Paris Copse. At 5.45 p.m. that day our barrage opened preparatory to an attack by the 1/4th and 1/5th R.S.F. of our Brigade, "A" Company under Lieut. N. Kennedy reinforcing the 1/5th R.S.F. Early next morning (October 2nd) "A" Company commenced an attack on a strong enemy position, but it broke down under

heavy barrage fire. Our men, however, ultimately reached their objective, but were withdrawn, and the original line was established. During this attack Lieut. G. Fair was killed. Towards evening one of our aeroplanes made a forced landing near "D" Company area, and drew very heavy enemy shell fire, during which Second-Lieut. Doughty was wounded.

On the afternoon of October 3rd orders were received for two Companies to launch an attack on one of the enemy's positions, and "B" and "D" Companies were detailed for this operation. Careful preparations were made after dusk had set in, and "B" Company, with "D" Company in support, went forward at 11 p.m., and in spite of heavy machine gun fire and shelling, the objective was attained, but our casualties were severe, Second-Lieut. Kirkwood being among the killed. Next day the Battalion was relieved by the 1/6th H.L.I., and marched to billets in Cantaing.

On October 7th the Battalion arrived at Vraucourt and entrained for Ligny, and for some days carried out training and re-equipping at Ambrines. On the 13th Lieut.-Colonel Hill-Whitson left the Battalion, and once again Major Laing took over temporary command. Subsequent movements of the Battalion were to Bully Grenay from Tinques station by train, from Bully Grenay to Lievin, thence to Montigny, and from Montigny to billets in Cite de la Basse Nayelles. On October 24th the Battalion marched to Raches, and remained there until the 28th, on which date it marched via Orchies to Landas, the Corps Commander inspecting the Battalion en route. At Landas, on October 31st, the fighting strength of the Battalion consisted of 25 officers and 431 other ranks.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE ARMISTICE AND AFTER.

The Battalion remained at Landas until November 5th, on which date a move was made to Rumegies, and on the following day Lieut.-Colonel A. W. Angus, D.S.O., assumed command of the Battalion. On the 9th we left Rumegies and marched to L'Ecarlate, and on the following day continued our march to Sirlaut. The Franco-Belgian frontier was crossed at Bon Secours. At Herchies on the 11th orders were received for our Brigade to advance to the railway line east of Jurbise, and the Battalion had formed up and was ready to move off when a message was received from Brigade Headquarters stating that hostilities would cease at 11 a.m. that day. The news, which seemed too good to be true, was communicated to the troops by Major Laing. "I'll bet its a damned lie," whispered one of our men to one of his comrades. As soon as the message had been read out the men threw their steel helmets in the air and gave vent to their jubilant feelings by cheering loudly, as in the hearts of all there was a feeling of thankfulness unutterable. The pipe band was immediately ordered out and played appropriate music through the village of Herchies, the villagers joining in the rejoicings. Thereafter the Battalion marched to Jurbise and occupied billets there. Never was a march undertaken by the Battalion with lighter heart, for the armistice practically meant that the grim business on which we had been engaged was at an end. Next day the Battalion enjoyed a complete rest from all duties, and on the 14th the Battalion was inspected and addressed by Brigadier-General G. H. Harrison, D.S.O., and on the following day, on the

occasion of the entry of British troops into Mons, the Battalion was represented by a detachment under Captain J. Dickson.

Occasion was now taken to start a system of recreational training, and during the remainder of the month classes in English, French, and German were begun, lectures on topics of interest were delivered, after-war problems were discussed, a recreation room was opened, and sports were held every afternoon. A good Rugby team was got together, and the first match against the 410th Coy. Royal Engineers ended in an easy victory for the Battalion fifteen by 34 points to nil. It may be mentioned that many of our men were attached to the Royal Engineers for instruction in their trades, and in this way much time was put to good use. During December a very pleasant time was spent at Jurbise, and our Rugby fifteen, capably tutored by Colonel Angus, made a name for itself. Five more matches were played, and in all we were victorious, not a point being scored against us. We defeated the 1/4th Royal Scots by 42 points to nil; the 17th Northumberland Fusiliers by 19 points to nil, and the same unit in the return match by 35 points to nil; the New Zealand Mounted Rifles by 3 points to nil; and the XXII. Corps Headquarters by 22 points to nil. Christmas Day was observed as a holiday, and we did ourselves as well as possible. In the afternoon an interesting game of " Soccer " was played between teams representing the officers and the N.C.O.'s, a well-contested match ending in a draw. It is of interest to note that on the last day of the year the strength of the Battalion was 32 officers and 674 other ranks, and on January 1st, 1919, the first batch of men left the unit for demobilisation. Thereafter demobilisation was carried on daily, and with demobilisation, ceremonial parades, lectures, battalion and educational training, and sport to occupy the attention of the officers and men, the time was not long in passing. An interesting function took place on January 17th, when at a Divisional ceremonial parade on Masieres drill-ground, M.C. and D.C.M. ribbons were presented by the Corps Commander. During February and March

demobilisation of the Battalion, excepting the Cadre, was completed. On March 22nd the Cadre moved from Jurbise to billets in Soignies, and remained there until May 31st, when the Cadre entrained for Antwerp, which was reached late that night. The Cadre remained in Antwerp until June 5th, on which date the Battalion remnant of three officers (Capt. and Adj. W. Graham, Capt. and Quartermaster J. A. Thomson, and Lieut. B. Montgomery), and 36 other ranks embarked on H.M.T. "Sicilian." Tilbury was reached on the morning of the 7th, and that night the Cadre left London for Galashiels. News that the Cadre would arrive at Galashiels early in the morning of the 8th was only received at the Depot at 7.30 the previous evening, but various means were adopted to spread the news, and there was a great crowd at the station in the morning to welcome the Cadre home. The Galashiels Town's Band and the Galashiels Ex-Soldiers' Pipe Band were in attendance, and after the Cadre had marched up Channel Street and down Bank Street with the King's and Regimental Colours, carried by Lieut. Montgomery and Sergeant Jeffrey respectively, a halt was made at the Corn Mill Square, where a hearty welcome was extended by Provost Watson. Captain Graham replied on behalf of the Cadre, and thereafter the Cadre proceeded to the Depot in Paton Street. The officers and men were billeted in hotels until June 10th, when the party proceeded to Georgetown for dispersal. The unit was finally disembodied by the end of the month, and Major P. L. P. Laing, who had been appointed to the temporary command of the 4th K.O.S.B., assisted by the officer in charge of the Depot, took over the regimental stores and documents.

It may be mentioned that after the Battalion left Alexandria for Gallipoli in June, 1915, Band-Sergeant T. McDonald, 1/4th K.O.S.B., along with four other ranks—Pte. A. Melrose, Pte. (afterwards C.Q.M.-Sgt.) G. Watson, and Ptes. W. Douglas and Cockburn—were left in charge of the Battalion baggage, kits, etc., at Alexandria. A similar number of men was also left by the other battalions in the 52nd Division. Many different

duties were carried out by these details. Garrison guards were found, and when not on guard the men were employed at the docks loading up water and food supplies for the Division on the Peninsula. An idea of the work involved may be gained from the fact that as many as 5000 petrol tins had to be filled with water every day, sealed, and put on boats for transport to the front. Later more men began to arrive at the base, and from the New Zealand and Australian troops Lieut. and Bandmaster Woods, Otago Section, New Zealand Mounted Rifles, assisted by Bandmaster McDonald, was able to form a band. Bandmaster Woods and his men, however, left for Gallipoli towards the end of August, 1915, and it was some time before a Band could be got together again. However, Colonel Payne, the Base Commandant, got in touch with Bandmaster McDonald, and from the low category men at the base—the 52nd and 42nd Divisions being well represented—on October 1st, 1915, the painstaking 4th K.O.S.B. Bandmaster re-formed, and took over the conductorship of the Band. From that date until March 11th, 1919, Bandmaster McDonald conducted the Band, which had a splendid record during that period.

About this time application was made to the Officer Commanding the 1/4th K.O.S.B. for the use of the Battalion instruments, which were lying at the base, for the Band, which was named the Alexandria Base Band. The application was readily granted, and on October 1st, 1915, the first programme was played with the Battalion's instruments, and by June 10th, 1917, no fewer than 668 performances had been recorded. On January 1st, 1917, orders came out that the Band would be a recognised unit of its own from that date, and from that time onwards the Band was named the Alexandria District Military Band, and when this change was made a new set of instruments replaced those of the 4th K.O.S.B., which were re-packed, stored, and eventually forwarded to Galashiels. Bandmaster McDonald continued to conduct the Band until March 11th, 1919, by which date the number of performances given had increased to 1404, Bandmaster McDonald having the proud distinction of being the only

member of the Band who took part in all these performances. Before leaving Alexandria he received the following appreciative letter from Brigadier-General R. C. Boyle:—

Headquarters,
Alexandria District,
11th March, 1919.

Sergt. T. McDonald,
4th K.O.S.B.,
Alexandria.

I understand you are shortly returning to Scotland on demobilisation. Since May, 1915, when you arrived in Egypt, you have as Bandmaster of the Mustapha Band, and afterwards the Alexandria District Band, given me great satisfaction. Your work has been of the greatest value to the troops under my command. The Band under your conductorship has given great pleasure both to soldiers and to the civilian population, and I am glad to record my appreciation of the work you have done.

I would add that owing to continuous changes in the personnel of the Band, due to military exigencies, your task has been a particularly difficult one. It is due to your skill as a trainer of instrumentalists that the Band under your direction has been kept up to a high standard all the time.

R. C. BOYLE,
Brigadier-General,
G.O.C. Alexandria District.

From the foregoing chapters it will be noted that the Battalion served with distinction at Gallipoli, and in Egypt, Palestine, and France. It took part in many important battles, including the action of the 12th of July, 1915, at Gallipoli, the battles of Romani, Gaza, Mughar, El Jib in Palestine, and the engagements at Henin Hill, Bullecourt, Moeuvres, and Cambrai in France. From

mobilisation to disembodiment no fewer than six officers had been appointed to the command of the Battalion, viz.:—Lieut.-Colonel J. McNeile, Lieut.-Colonel G. T. B. Wilson, D.S.O., Lieut.-Colonel J. M. B. Sanders, M.C., Lieut.-Colonel R. Dashwood-Tandy, Lieut.-Colonel E. C. Hill-Whitson, and Lieut.-Colonel A. W. Angus, D.S.O.; while officers who had temporary command of the Battalion at various times were Major W. E. A. Cochrane, Major C. A. H. Maclean, Major W. T. Forrest, M.C., Major M. Jobson, Major P. L. P. Laing, Major R. M. Paton, Major R. W. Sharpe, Captain W. F. Cochrane, Captain L. P. Cathels, and Captain J. Dickson. Of these latter officers, Major Forrest and Major Laing had command for the longest periods.

CHAPTER XV.

1/4TH K.O.S.B. CASUALTIES.

The numbers of casualties sustained by the Battalion while on active service were as follows, the figures including 4th K.O.S.B. officers and men who were killed and wounded while serving with other units:—

Killed, Missing, Died of Wounds and Sickness.		Wounded.	
Officers.	Other Ranks.	Officers.	Other Ranks.
44	606	52	1019
Total Casualties in all ranks—1721.			

AWARDS.

The following officers, warrant officers, non-commissioned officers, and men of the Battalion won awards:

Lt.-Colonel G. T. B. Wilson	...	D.S.O. and Order of St Stanislaw with Sword.
Major G. Dun	... ..	O.B.E. and Order of the Nile (4th class).
„ W. T. Forrest	... ..	Military Cross.
„ P. L. P. Laing	... ..	Order of the Nile (4th Class).
Captain A. P. Nimmo	... ..	Military Cross.
„ A. Fairgrieve	... ..	do.
„ W. N. Alston	... ..	do.
„ A. W. Harvie	... ..	do.
„ H. O'C. Jones	... ..	do.
„ D. Burns	... ..	do.
„ N. D. Kennedy	... ..	do.
„ C. H. K. Smith, R.A.M.C.	(att.)	Military Cross.
Lieutenant J. J. S. Thomson	(att. 155th L.T.M. Battery)	Military Cross.
„ C. C. Usher	(att. 5th Bn. Warwick Regt.)	Military Cross.
„ E. A. Cochrane	(att. 5th Bn. Warwick Regt.)	Croce de Guerre (Italian Decoration).
2nd Lieutenant D. A. R. Cuthbert		Military Cross.
„ J. Munro	...	do.
„ J. D. Pollok	...	do.
„ E. Dinning	...	do.
„ J. McFadzean	...	Chevalier de l'Ordre de la Couronne and Croix de Guerre (Belgian).
535 Regtl. Sgt.-Major Murray, G.,		Military Cross, Distinguished Conduct Medal and Medaille Militaire.

	8337 Coy. Sgt.-Major Potter, T. G., Distinguished Conduct Medal.	
200,864	„ Elliot H.,	do.
200,202	Sergeant Waugh, J.,	do.
	6550 L.-Corporal Dick, D.,	do.
200,450	Private Currie, W.,	do.
201,871	„ Shaw, A.,	do.
200,075	Coy. Sgt.-Major Roberts, J., Military Medal.	
201,434	„ Soulsby, T.,	do.
31,763	„ Foley, D. J.,	do.
200,216	Sergeant Jeffrey, G.,	do.
200,036	„ Scott, C.,	do.
200,404	„ Dobson, J.,	do.
200,019	„ Murphy, A.,	do.
200,505	„ Robson, G.,	do.
200,107	Corporal Bell, T.,	do.
200,767	„ Gibb, A.,	do.
200,397	L.-Corporal Ramsay, A.,	do.
200,407	„ Melrose, A.,	do.
201,318	„ Falconer, M.,	do.
200,980	„ Nairn, A.,	do.
200,414	Private Stenhouse, T.,	do.
200,804	„ Rule, A.,	do.
200,286	„ Nairn, A.,	do.
209,952	„ Thomson, R. W.,	do.
30,597	„ Ferguson, H.,	do.
200,604	„ Angus, A.,	do.
201,199	„ Fairbairn, T.,	do.
200,690	„ McEwan, A.,	do.
200,996	„ Wilson, T.,	do.
200,117	„ Deans, R. W.,	do.
200,529	„ Whitehead, C.,	do.
203,562	„ Sanderson, C.,	do.
200,152	„ Caverhill, J.,	do.
201,180	„ Scott, J.,	do.
200,539	„ Scott, R.,	do.
31,828	„ Langan, W.,	do.
42,271	„ White, E.,	do.
30,504	„ Crichton, D.,	do.
200,791	„ Little, E. C.,	do.
15,523	„ Egan, P.,	do.
200,291	„ Burns, J.,	do.
200,534	„ Somerville, J.,	do.
241,584	„ Kerr, J.,	do.
200,118	„ Robson, B.,	do.
241,618	„ Johnston, G.,	do.
82,949	„ Dickson, A.,	do.
200,751	„ Heron, J.,	do.
241,193	„ Richardson, S., (att. 155th L.T.M. Bty.) Military Medal.	

201,562 Coy.	Sergt.-Major Wood, J. W.,	Meritorious Service Medal.
200,194 Coy.	Q.M. Sergt. Dick, P.,	do.
200,488	Watson, G.,	do.

MENTIONS IN DISPATCHES.

Lt.-Colonel G. T. B. Wilson, D.S.O.	December, 1915
Major W. T. Forrest, M.C.	... December, 1915, and June, 1917
„ P. L. P. Laing	... December, 1915
„ Major G. Dun, O.B.E.	... June, 1917, and June, 1919
Captain T. T. Muir	... June, 1917
2nd Lieutenant L. D. Robertson	... June, 1917
Captain H. O'C. Jones, M.C.	... July, 1917
Lieutenant and Q.M. E. H. Follis	July, 1917
„ C. C. Usher, M.C.	... — 1918
„ E. A. Cochrane, Croce de Guerre	— 1918
Major H. S. Dickson	... — 1919
Captain J. M. Dun	... — 1919
535 Regtl. Sergt.-Major Murray, G., M.C., D.C.M.,	Decr., 1915
6550 L.-Corporal Dick, D., D.C.M.	December, 1915
200,565 Sergeant Elliot, T. R.	... June, 1917
200,202 „ Waugh, J., D.C.M.	June, 1917
200,441 Corporal Lindsay, J.	... June, 1917
200,952 Private Thomson, R. W., M.M.	June, 1917
200,216 Sergeant Jeffrey, G., M.M.	... April, 1918

SUMMARY OF AWARDS AND MENTIONS.

Order of the British Empire	... ..	1
Distinguished Service Order	... ..	1
Military Cross—Officers	... ..	15
Warrant Officer	... ..	1
Distinguished Conduct Medal	... ..	7
Military Medal	... ..	42
Meritorious Service Medal	... ..	3
Order of St Stanislaw with Sword	... ..	1
Order of the Nile (4th class)	... ..	2
Chevalier de l'Ordre de la Couronne	... ..	1
Croix de Guerre (Belgian)	... ..	1
Croce de Guerre (Italian)	... ..	1
Medaille Militaire	... ..	1
Mentions in Despatches—Officers	... ..	14
Other Ranks	... ..	7
Total	... ..	98

THE ROLL OF HONOUR.

The undernoted list includes all officers and other ranks of the 4th Bn. K.O.S.B. who were serving with their unit at the time they became casualties. The roll also includes those officers, N.C.O.'s and men of the 4th Battalion who were killed while attached for duty to other battalions of the same regiment.

OFFICERS.

2nd Lieut. A. Ainslie,	Killed in action	19-4-17
Lieut. T. M. Alexander,	"	12-7-15
" R. B. Anderson,	"	19-4-17
" H. L. Armstrong,	"	25-4-18
" A. Bulman,	Missing. Death accepted	12-7-15
2nd Lieut. J. A. G. Cairns,	Killed in action	29-12-15
Lieut. G. G. Carmichael,	Missing. Death accepted	1-8-18
Major H. P. Cochrane,	Killed in action	20-9-17
Capt. W. F. Cochrane,	"	19-4-17
2nd Lieut. R. H. Connochie,	"	31-7-17
" S. E. Ditchfield,	"	"
" J. A. Dowens,	"	17-10-18
Lieut. G. Fair,	Died of wounds	1-10-18
2nd Lieut. C. G. Farr,	"	25-3-18
Major W. T. Forrest,	Killed in action	19-4-17
Lieut. C. Gardiner,	Missing. Death accepted	25-4-18
2nd Lieut. A. H. M. Henderson,	Killed in action	12-7-15
Major J. Herbertson,	Missing. Death accepted	"
2nd Lieut. J. S. Hogarth,	Killed in action	25-3-17
Lieut. J. B. Innes,	"	12-7-15
Major McG. Jobson,	Died of wounds	3-5-18
2nd Lieut. W. L. Kirkwood,	Killed in action	4-10-18
Capt. and Adj. J. C. Lang,	Missing. Death accepted	12-7-15
2nd Lieut. R. Logan,	Killed in action	20-10-18
Capt. R. R. M. Lumgair,	"	19-4-17
2nd Lieut. A. McCall,	Died of wounds	23-8-17
" J. W. Macintyre,	Died of heart failure	30-3-17
Lt.-Col. J. McNeile,	Missing. Death accepted	12-7-15
2nd Lieut. J. Mayall,	Died of wounds	13-11-18
Lieut. W. M. Mercer,	Killed in action	28-11-17
2nd Lieut. J. C. Moore,	"	19-4-17
Lieut. A. P. Nimmo,	Died of wounds	17-11-17
2nd Lieut. J. B. Patrick,	Missing. Death accepted	12-7-15
Lieut. L. D. Robertson,	Killed in action	13-11-17
Capt. H. Sanderson,	Missing. Death accepted	12-7-15
Lieut. A. H. Scott,	"	3-5-17
2nd Lieut. G. Sutherland,	Killed in action	9-4-17

Surg.-Maj. D. R. Taylor, R.A.M.C.,	Killed in action	12-7-15
Lieut. W. Thomson,	Died of wounds	26-8-18
Capt. A. Wallace,	Killed in action	12-7-15
2nd Lieut. J. M. Watson,	"	13-11-17
" C. C. Watt,	"	9-5-17
Lieut. J. Wood,	"	13-11-17
" P. Woodhead,	Missing. Death accepted	12-7-15

OTHER RANKS.

843 Private Fairgrieve, J.,	Died of wounds	18-6-15
6694 " Dick, J.,	"	20-6-15
7126 " Kinghorn, W.,	"	21-6-15
6498 " Murray, J.,	"	"
7106 " Lindores, A.,	"	22-6-15
4462 " Cowe, R.,	Killed in action	24-6-15
4451 L/Cpl. Ford, J.,	"	"
6901 Private Crombie, J. S.,	Died of wounds	28-6-15
564 A/Cpl. Stevenson, T.,	"	1-7-15
4339 Private Fairbairn, W.,	Missing. Presumed dead	10-7-15
6794 " Edgar, J.,	"	12-7-15
7357 " Sword, A.,	"	"
7372 " Morley, S.,	"	"
6478 " Stewart, W.,	"	"
6484 " Brydone, A.,	"	"
6485 " Reid, A.,	"	"
6491 " Dalgleish, A.,	"	"
6494 " Ballantyne, J.,	"	"
6464 A/Sgt. Waite, J.,	"	"
6466 Private Gall, A.,	"	"
6685 L/Cpl. Poustie, J.,	"	"
6558 Private Weir, R.,	"	"
6559 " Hall, F.,	"	"
6561 " Laing, R.,	"	"
6586 L/Cpl. Johnstone, W.,	"	"
6610 Private M'Culloch, C.,	"	"
6500 " Tait, J.,	"	"
6508 " Imrie, H.,	"	"
6511 " Hardie, J.,	"	"
6725 L/Cpl. Hume, G.,	"	"
6703 Cpl. Sanderson, T.,	"	"
6717 L/Cpl. Brown, H.,	"	"
6719 Private Paterson, R.,	"	"
6720 Cpl. Hogg, W.,	"	"
6646 Private Pringle, G.,	"	"
6658 " Amos, J.,	"	"
6666 " Cockburn, G.,	"	"
6668 Cpl. Yuile, C.,	"	"
6675 L/Cpl. Reid, A.,	"	"

	Missing.	Presumed dead	12-7-15
6397 Private Grieve, R.,			
6389 " Scott, W.,		"	"
6380 L/Sgt. Waddell, A.,		"	"
6137 L/Cpl. Redpath, R.,		"	"
6026 Sgt. Miller, D.,		"	"
4550 Private Spalding, G.,		"	"
4518 " Thomson, G.,		"	"
4519 " Townsley, M.,		"	"
4539 " Hardie, J.,		"	"
6737 " Walls, W.,		"	"
6727 " Thomson, T.,		"	"
6732 " Currie, J.,		"	"
785 " Bunyan, A.,		"	"
818 " Law, J.,		"	"
4485 " Rutherford, A.,		"	"
781 " Polwarth, T.,		"	"
782 " Gilholm, J.,		"	"
784 " Stewart, W.,		"	"
7573 L/Cpl. Ludski, N.,		"	"
7480 Private Anderson, G.,		"	"
7466 " Jamieson, D.,		"	"
6861 " Clark, T.,		"	"
6864 " Oag, D.,		"	"
6867 " Whitelaw, D.		"	"
6874 " Dalgliesh, J.,		"	"
6880 " Bennet, W.,		"	"
6881 L/Cpl. Waldie, W.,		"	"
6890 Private Smith, G.,		"	"
6892 " Cranston, W.,		"	"
6830 " Keddie, C.,		"	"
6839 " Lunn, T.,		"	"
7654 " Beattie, J.,		"	"
7724 " Ritchie, D.,		"	"
7007 " Snowden, J.,		"	"
7030 " Deans, J.,		"	"
7036 " Rutherford, W.,		"	"
7046 L/Cpl. Rathie, W.,		"	"
6983 Private Tyson, J.,		"	"
6988 " Coughlin, J.,		"	"
6981 " Shiel, J.,		"	"
6997 " Rutherford, W.,		"	"
7000 " Sanderson, T.,		"	"
7062 " Smellie, J.,		"	"
6844 " Haig, W.,		"	"
7217 " Docherty, J.,		"	"
7227 " Leitch, J.,		"	"
7090 " Young, G.,		"	"
7095 " Clelland, W.,		"	"

6911	Private	Riddle, R.,	Missing.	Presumed dead	12-7-15
6920	"	Young, R.,	"	"	"
7344	"	Hope, T.,	"	"	"
7359	"	Telfer, J.,	"	"	"
7362	"	Brown, P. C.,	"	"	"
7367	"	Galbraith, J.,	"	"	"
7108	"	Pievey, G. J.,	"	"	"
7139	"	Allen, D.,	"	"	"
7142	"	Best, A.,	"	"	"
7148	"	Cairns, A.,	"	"	"
7165	"	Mather, J. H.,	"	"	"
7169	"	Queenan, J.,	"	"	"
7172	"	Robertson, J.,	"	"	"
7189	"	Yeomans, R. B.,	"	"	"
7265	"	Purves, A.,	"	"	"
7270	"	Scott, A.,	"	"	"
7275	"	Richley, W.,	"	"	"
7285	"	Davie, J.,	"	"	"
6574	"	Paton, W.,	Died of wounds	"	"
6125	Sgt.	Whyte, J.,	"	"	"
6589	Private	Fox, J.,	Killed in action	"	"
6599	"	Knox, A.,	"	"	"
6613	"	Walker W.,	"	"	"
6519	"	Hill, W.,	"	"	"
6722	A/Cpl.	Rae, J.,	"	"	"
6723	Private	Currie, J.,	"	"	"
6619	"	Davidson, A.,	"	"	"
6645	"	Walker, W.,	"	"	"
6652	"	Henderson, A.,	"	"	"
6171	Sgt.	Scott, J.,	"	"	"
4545	Private	Webb, W.,	"	"	"
811	"	Wilson, A.,	"	"	"
779	"	Kerr, J.,	"	"	"
7553	"	Buglass, W.,	"	"	"
7555	"	Sanderson, W.,	"	"	"
6897	"	Barbour, G.,	"	"	"
6898	"	Cameron, R.,	"	"	"
7668	"	Mack, A.,	"	"	"
7058	"	Johnstone, G.,	"	"	"
7060	"	Miller, W.,	"	"	"
6854	"	Brown, A.,	"	"	"
7192	"	Ballantyne, G.,	"	"	"
7197	"	Callender, F.,	"	"	"
7077	"	Lorimer, A.,	"	"	"
7078	"	Oliver, P.,	"	"	"
6902	"	Andison, J.,	"	"	"
6904	"	Handyside, R.,	"	"	"
6912	"	Riddle, W.,	"	"	"

6916	Private	Weatherstone, J.,	Killed in action	12-7-15
6924	"	Rutherford, G.,	"	"
7345	"	Kerr, G.,	"	"
7368	"	Hunter, D.,	"	"
7112	"	Watson, R.,	"	"
7314	"	Grant, R.,	"	"
7246	"	Wright, J.,	"	"
6779	"	Kinnon, J.,	"	"
7239	"	Smart, J.,	"	"
844	A/Cpl.	Lawson, T.,	"	"
917	Private	Beatson, W.,	"	"
4274	A/Cpl.	Dods, W.,	"	"
6816	Private	Forster, J.,	"	"
6815	"	Davidson, R.,	"	"
7404	"	Cuthill, S.,	"	"
7439	"	Nairn, W.,	"	"
7433	"	Amos, H.,	"	"
7519	"	Richardson, J.,	"	"
491	"	Cunningham, E.,	"	"
480	A/Sgt.	Walker, J.,	"	"
523	Private	Halley, J.,	"	"
339	"	Douglas, J.,	"	"
629	"	Combe, W.,	Died of wounds	"
7288	Private	Hardie, J.,	Missing. Presumed dead	"
7291	"	Hall, R.,	"	"
7300	"	Thomson, A.,	"	"
7301	"	Telfer, A.,	"	"
7304	"	Waters, J.,	"	"
7305	"	Brown, R.,	"	"
7306	"	Chalmers, W.,	"	"
7310	"	Aikman, A.,	"	"
7321	"	Paterson, J.,	"	"
7328	"	Mack, W.,	"	"
7247	"	Wishart, T.,	"	"
7252	"	Dodds, R.,	"	"
7259	"	Hume, J.,	"	"
6766	L/Cpl.	Martin, A.,	"	"
6767	Private	Hollands, G.,	"	"
6772	"	Sanderson, J.,	"	"
6775	"	Anderson, J.,	"	"
6777	"	Hunter, W.,	"	"
7232	"	Muir, M.,	"	"
7235	"	Quinn, A.,	"	"
7242	"	Simpson, R.,	"	"
6748	"	Cessford, A.,	"	"
6425	L/Cpl.	Smith, J.,	"	"
6423	L/Sgt.	Miller, R.,	"	"
4371	Sgt.	Aikman, W.,	"	"

	Missing.	Presumed dead	12-7-15
4376 Private Harper, D.,			
4380 " Haig, A.,		"	"
4387 " Watt, C.,		"	"
4403 " Marshall, H.,		"	"
857 " Haig, R.,		"	"
858 " Gray, A.,		"	"
830 " Wright, T.,		"	"
822 " Handry, A.,		"	"
4414 Cpl. Galbraith, J.,		"	"
4436 Private White, J.,		"	"
4446 " Hunter, W.,		"	"
757 " Mackenzie, J.,		"	"
760 " Davidson, G.,		"	"
897 " Scott, W.,		"	"
899 " Cranston, A.,		"	"
900 " Dickson, R.,		"	"
884 A/L/Cpl. Heggie, A.,		"	"
885 Private Laidlaw, T.,		"	"
892 " Halliday, R.,		"	"
895 " Knox, J.,		"	"
4203 " Wilson, R.,		"	"
4354 " Scott, W.,		"	"
918 Cpl. Caldwell, A.,		"	"
922 Private Whillans, R.,		"	"
4020 A/Sgt. Johnston, W.,		"	"
4032 A/C.S.M. Wood, J.,		"	"
570 Sgt. Thomson, W.,		"	"
573 Private Blain, J.,		"	"
574 " Storrie, J.,		"	"
580 Sgt. McPherson, J.,		"	"
598 Private Messer, A.,		"	"
617 L/Sgt. Oliver, J.,		"	"
623 Private Fair, A.,		"	"
643 " Reid, W.,		"	"
633 " Myles, J.,		"	"
656 " Thomson, W. T.,		"	"
657 " Murray, J.,		"	"
659 " Heskeith, G.,		"	"
879 Cpl. Fraser, G.,		"	"
883 Private Farmer, T.,		"	"
306 " Street, C.,		"	"
106 " Hogarth, A.,		"	"
53 Sgt. Middlemas, A.,		"	"
546 Private Wallace, B.,		"	"
553 " Hunter, J.,		"	"
554 " Darling, W.,		"	"
745 " Kennedy, J.,		"	"
749 " Rae, J.,		"	"

6826	Private Cairns, W.	Missing.	Presumed dead	12-7-15
6762	„ Smail, A.,		„	„
6818	„ Cunningham, A.,		„	„
6819	„ Smith, W.,		„	„
6781	„ Paterson, W.,		„	„
6798	„ Hogg, J.,		„	„
6790	„ Angus, H.,		„	„
6802	„ McTavish, F.,		„	„
6807	„ Romanes, T.,		„	„
6835	„ Eckford, R.,		„	„
6467	„ Delaney, D.,		„	„
6471	„ Stevenson, J.,		„	„
6473	„ Johnstone, A.,		„	„
6532	L/Cpl. Russell, A.,		„	„
6529	Private Cowan, W.,		„	„
6542	„ Chisholm, R.,		„	„
6475	„ Wood, K.,		„	„
6439	„ Roden, H.,		„	„
6452	C.S.M. Watson, D.,		„	„
6457	Private Miller, J.,		„	„
6454	„ Henderson, A.,		„	„
7402	„ Turnbull, T.,		„	„
7387	„ Elmslie, W.,		„	„
7378	„ Shearlaw, A.,		„	„
7443	„ Schoolar, W. H.,		„	„
7438	„ Hendry, J.,		„	„
7432	„ Wilson, J.,		„	„
7464	„ Boyd, G. W.,		„	„
7461	„ Rutherford, T.,		„	„
7459	„ Jeffrey, W.,		„	„
7449	L/Cpl. Ballantyne, J.		„	„
7447	Private Minto, P.,		„	„
7430	„ Swanston, P.,		„	„
7425	„ Mason, R.,		„	„
7416	„ Thomson, T.,		„	„
7415	„ Rae, W.,		„	„
7407	„ Grieve, W.,		„	„
7617	„ Ingles, G.,		„	„
7619	„ Anderson, F.,		„	„
7622	„ Buckham, A.,		„	„
7542	„ Gladson, W.,		„	„
7736	„ Douglas, T.,		„	„
7580	„ Sligh, R.,		„	„
7582	„ Anderson, A.,		„	„
7583	„ Barnett, W.,		„	„
7601	„ Darling, J.,		„	„
674	„ Storrie, A.,		„	„
670	„ Hogg, W.,		„	„

697	Private	Stewart, D.,	Missing.	Presumed dead	12-7-15
699	"	Barrett, W.,		"	"
708	"	Thomson, C.,		"	"
726	"	Kerr, J.,		"	"
566	"	Wait, J. S.,		"	"
492	"	Whittaker, T.,		"	"
494	L/Cpl.	Anderson, C. T.,		"	"
496	Private	Rodger, W.,		"	"
540	"	Stavert, R.,		"	"
545	Cpl.	Neil, W.,		"	"
477	Private	Hall, C.,		"	"
515	"	Rose, J.,		"	"
516	"	Scott, M.,		"	"
527	Cpl.	Murray, J.,		"	"
448	Private	Jackson, H.,		"	"
446	"	Drummond, A.,		"	"
557	"	Waldie, J.,		"	"
488	"	Scott, W.,		"	"
4499	"	Waddell, R.,		"	"
4452	"	Hope, W.,		"	"
4459	L/Cpl.	Robertson, A.,		"	"
6744	Private	Taylor, W.,		"	"
6761	"	Shiels, W.,	Died of disease		13-7-15
4388	L/Cpl.	Frater, J.,	Killed in action		"
658	Private	Riddell, A.,	Died of wounds		"
4501	"	Wilson, J.,		"	"
7376	"	Swan, A.,		"	"
7475	"	Smith, J.,		"	"
7655	"	Bennett, T.,		"	"
7168	"	Purves, T. J.,	Killed in action		14-7-15
7460	"	Kyle, J.,		"	"
4396	"	Smerdon, C. J.,	Died of wounds		"
6768	"	Turnbull, W.,		"	15-7-15
4127	Sgt.	Wilson, J.,	Killed in action		"
6591	Private	Donaldson, W.,	Died of wounds		17-7-15
7249	"	Brunton, J.,		"	"
7241	"	Scott, G.,		"	"
1113	"	McVittie, T.,	Killed in action		18-7-15
7394	"	Brodie, C.,	Died of wounds		"
7448	"	Aitken, J.,		"	19-7-15
777	"	Edmunds, R.,		"	20-7-15
778	"	Lunham, T.,		"	24-7-15
4389	L/Cpl.	Hume, R.,		"	25-7-15
6833	Private	Wright, J.,		"	26-7-15
7627	"	Jackson, G.,	Died of disease		29-7-15
7739	"	Holywell, H.,		"	8-8-15
7229	"	Middlemiss, J. F.,	Killed in action		4-9-15
6742	"	Redpath, A.,	Killed accidentally		5-9-15

662	Private	Turnbull, R.,	Died of disease	9-9-15
7150	"	Dumma, R.,	"	19-9-15
6780	"	Matthews, W.,	Killed in action	11-10-15
1727	"	Thom, J.,	Died of disease	14-10-15
4408	"	Crow, R.,	"	17-10-15
7076	"	Kerr, J.,	"	19-10-15
555	"	Fortune, J.,	"	20-10-15
871	"	Gray, A.,	"	27-10-15
6433	Bugler	Currie, W.,	"	29-10-15
6550	L/Cpl.	Dick, D.,	"	10-11-15
4227	Private	Boulton, E.,	Killed in action	21-11-15
7631	"	Martin, A.,	Killed accidentally	"
6474	"	Smail, A.,	Died of disease	25-11-15
4435	"	White, G.,	"	27-11-15
729	A/L/Cpl.	Wood, F.,	"	4-12-15
825	Private	Brannon, A.,	"	9-12-15
7397	"	Nicol, T.,	Died of wounds	17-12-15
6726	"	Wallis, W.,	"	18-12-15
4448	"	Turnbull, H.,	Died of disease	5-10-16
4411	"	Martin, W.,	"	10-10-16
203,178	"	Hislop, A.,	Lost at sea	1-1-17
562	L/Sgt.	Thompson, T.,	"	"
200,831	Private	Thomson, J.,	Died of disease while a Prisoner of War at Angora	8-1-17
8411	"	Thomson, J. T.,	Died of disease	31-1-17
201,688	"	McManus, A.,	Accidentally killed	6-3-17
201,051	"	Mein, R.,	Died of disease	27-3-17
200,150	"	Dickson, J.,	Died of wounds	6-4-17
201,223	"	Turnbull, J.,	"	6-4-17
201,157	"	Bell, W.,	Missing. Presumed dead	18-4-17
200,822	"	Lough, R.,	"	"
201,541	"	Frier, R.,	"	"
200,919	"	Douglas, G.,	Killed in action	19-4-17
201,124	"	Elliot, W.,	"	"
201,221	"	Geazie, A.,	"	"
240,222	"	Dolan, M.,	Missing. Presumed dead	19-4-17
200,254	L/Cpl.	Dougal, G.,	"	"
200,766	Private	Coulter, R.,	"	"
201,061	L/Cpl.	Callender, W.,	"	"
200,285	Private	Ford, J.,	"	"
200,941	"	Murray, J.,	"	"
200,758	"	White, R.,	"	"
241,656	Sgt.	McAllister, T.,	"	"
201,307	Private	Galbraith, W.,	"	"
200,672	"	Hope, G.,	"	"
201,807	"	Jolly, E.,	"	"
240,967	"	McNae, J.,	Killed in action	"

200,167	Private	Cowan, F.,	Killed in action	19-4-17
200,823	"	Webb, G.,	"	"
201,337	"	Landels, J.,	"	"
200,852	"	Todd, T.,	"	"
200,741	"	Paterson, J.,	"	"
241,651	"	Murray, W.,	"	"
200,336	"	Kennedy, J.,	"	"
200,269	A/Cpl.	Watson, G.,	"	"
200,241	Private	Paterson, G.,	"	"
200,693	"	Brockie, W. R.,	"	"
240,666	"	Maxwell, M.,	"	"
201,222	"	Welsh, J.,	"	"
200,266	"	Dunn, C.,	"	"
241,669	"	Halliday, A.,	"	"
201,283	"	Bell, J.,	"	"
201,442	"	Shiel, W.,	"	"
200,571	"	Cunningham, W.,	Died of wounds	"
200,946	"	Turnbull, R.,	"	20-4-17
241,650	"	Brown, W.,	"	"
200,696	"	Cochrane, R.,	"	"
200,809	"	Young, C.,	"	23-4-17
200,162	Sgt.	Gray, A.,	"	24-4-17
200,642	Private	Ferguson, H.,	"	26-4-17
201,558	"	Hunter, J. A.,	"	27-4-17
200,708	"	Johnstone, R.,	"	1-5-17
200,412	"	Thorburn, R.	"	3-5-17
201,451	"	Blake, A.,	"	10-5-17
201,773	"	Cassidy, J.,	"	11-5-17
200,899	"	Robertson, A.,	Died of disease	20-5-17
201,455	"	Craig, J. A.,	Missing. Presumed dead	31-5-17
200,720	Cpl.	Yeomans, W.	Died of wounds	7-6-17
201,265	Private	Young, R.,	"	22-6-17
201,267	"	Turnbull, P.,	"	9-7-17
6770	"	Herkes, W.,	Missing. Presumed dead	12-7-17
200,148	L/Cpl.	Fernie, I.,	Died of disease	8-9-17
200,961	Private	Crosbie, A.,	Killed in action	11-9-17
200,092	"	Duncan, A.,	"	25-10-17
201,022	C.Q.M.S.	McDonald, D.,	Died of wounds	30-10-17
201,877	Private	Cunningham, J.,	"	2-11-17
201,429	"	Leslie, W.,	Killed in action	"
201,404	"	McEwan, T.,	"	"
30492	"	Eggleston, F.,	"	13-11-17
200,014	"	McLeod, S.,	"	"
201,858	"	McGuire, D.,	"	"
201,246	"	Anderson, J.,	"	"
30723	"	Barber, R.,	"	"
201,160	"	Beattie, R.,	"	"
200,124	"	Burton, J.,	"	"

201,252	Private	Cockburn, J.,	Killed in action	13-11-17
200,845	L/Cpl.	Cowan, A.,	"	"
200,832	Cpl.	Craig, G.,	"	"
200,149	L/Cpl.	Dalgliesh, S.,	"	"
200,159	Private	Dalgliesh, T.,	"	"
31730	"	Fox, E.,	"	"
30947	"	Heaps, J.,	"	"
201,401	L/Cpl.	Jenkins, A.,	"	"
30916	Private	Rain, J.,	"	"
30838	"	Robertson, J.,	"	"
200,850	"	Tait, A.,	"	"
201,116	"	Thomson, R.,	"	"
201,961	"	White, H.,	"	"
201,211	"	Lindores, A.,	"	"
201,867	"	Owens, E.,	"	"
30726	"	Pinfold, H.,	"	"
200,537	"	Pow, J.,	"	"
201,496	"	Preacher, W.,	"	"
240,422	"	Bissett, J.,	"	"
23048	"	Maxwell, J.,	"	"
201,618	"	Thompson, I.,	"	"
201,865	"	Kyle, J.,	"	"
201,260	"	Leithead, P.,	"	"
200,113	"	Rorrison, G.,	Died of wounds	14-11-17
200,483	L/Cpl.	Cunliffe, W.,	"	"
200,918	L/Sgt.	Douglas, J.,	"	"
201,410	Private	Lauder, A.,	"	"
201,248	"	Turnbull, A.,	"	"
200,408	"	Scott, R.,	"	17-11-17
200,446	"	Forrest, J.,	"	23-11-17
200,586	"	Nairn, A.,	Killed in action	"
200,073	"	Taylor, A.,	"	"
201,486	"	Adamson, A.,	"	28-11-17
241,599	"	Clarke, J.,	"	"
200,868	"	Lough, T.,	"	"
200,392	"	McGhee, J.,	"	"
201,184	"	Reid, J.,	"	"
200,631	"	Allen, J.,	"	"
30910	"	Bain, W.,	"	"
200,441	Cpl.	Lindsay, J.,	Died of wounds	29-11-17
200,464	Private	Donaldson, T.,	Died while a Prisoner of War (cause not known)	1/30-11-17
200,355	"	Christie, D.,	Died of wounds	1-12-17
200,303	"	Pringle, A.,	"	5-12-17
30783	"	Sanders, T.,	"	7-12-17
201,933	"	Blake, T.,	Died of disease	10-12-17
201,249	"	McMichan, S.,	Killed in action	11-12-17
201,039	"	Hunter, H.,	Died of wounds	15-12-17

201,190	Private	Glendinning, A.,	Killed in action	22-12-17
200,484	Cpl.	Johnstone, J.,	Missing. Presumed dead	30-12-17
28921	Private	Gerrard, J. R.,	Died of wounds	2-1-18
31756	"	Benson, T.,	"	12-1-18
33468	"	Obree, M.,	Died of disease	10-2-18
201,421	"	Scott, J.,	Missing. Presumed dead	26-2-18
30635	"	Wilson, J.,	Died of disease	18-6-18
45548	"	Hay, A.,	"	7-7-18
45256	"	Fergie, T.,	"	10-7-18
45642	"	Scott, J.,	"	"
45472	"	Elliot, F.,	"	12-7-18
45775	"	Edgar, W.,	"	18-7-18
45297	"	Douglas, R.,	"	28-7-18
31809	"	Sullivan, J.,	"	12-8-18
42163	"	Terrace, A.,	Died of wounds	"
200,039	Sgt.	Smart, G.,	"	13-8-18
45505	Private	McIlwraith, J.,	Died of disease	14-8-18
45240	"	Wilson, A.,	"	19-8-18
45761	"	Yule, J.,	"	24-8-18
201,117	"	Cunningham, J.,	Died of wounds	"
200,471	"	Noble, W.,	Killed in action	"
201,267	"	Colvin, A.,	"	26-8-18
202,081	"	Flint, J.,	"	"
31838	L/Cpl.	Huddart, T.,	"	"
31765	Private	Spence, J.,	"	"
30829	"	Thomson, A.,	"	"
31748	"	Wood, C.,	"	"
201,379	"	Gray, C.,	Killed accidentally	30-8-18
201,491	"	Bell, W. E.,	Killed in action	1-9-18
241,598	"	Cochrane, J.,	"	"
41138	"	Cormack, P.,	"	"
240,736	"	Coupland, H.,	"	"
31812	"	Elliot, J.,	"	"
200,819	"	Foster, T.,	"	"
200,578	Sgt.	Knox, W.,	"	"
201,344	Private	Mack, J.,	"	"
30634	"	Merrin, G.,	"	"
202,914	"	Milne, G.,	"	"
242,750	"	McLean, P.,	"	"
200,317	Cpl.	Renton, J.,	"	"
42155	Private	Smith, D.,	"	"
30508	"	Scott, J.,	"	"
200,636	A/Sgt.	Scott, W.,	"	"
202,006	Private	Somerville, F.,	"	"
31840	"	Thomson, E.,	"	"
200,610	Sgt.	Thorburn, J.,	"	"
201,054	Private	Turnbull, J.,	"	"
30251	"	Wilson, J.,	"	"

201,424	Private	Young, H.,	Killed in action	1-9-18
23061	"	Milne, G.,	"	"
242,340	"	Knowles, A.,	"	"
41977	"	McMahon, P.,	"	"
42149	"	Simpson, D.,	Died of wounds	2-9-18
31775	"	Atkinson, H.,	"	"
201,010	"	Bennett, T.,	"	"
30556	"	McCusker, F.,	"	3-9-18
202,908	"	Howe, J.,	"	"
200,072	A/L/Cpl.	Douglas, F.,	"	6-9-18
33759	Private	Morrison, J.,	Died of disease	9-9-18
200,081	"	Nichol, W.,	Killed in action	16-9-18
42261	"	Rose, W.,	"	"
31766	"	Atkins, G.,	"	17-9-18
201,151	"	Gibbs, G.,	"	"
201,551	"	Hay, W.,	"	"
30588	"	Piper, E.,	"	"
200,804	"	Rule, A.,	"	"
31786	"	Melling, H.,	"	18-9-18
201,063	"	Rodgers, J.,	"	"
28780	"	McKay, H.,	Died of wounds	19-9-18
201,569	"	Liddle, A.,	Missing. Presumed dead	20-9-18
202,907	"	Anderson, J.,	Died of wounds	"
200,976	"	Tice, W.,	"	"
201,387	"	Avery, W.,	Killed in action	"
200,233	L/Cpl.	Craig, J.,	"	"
35312	Private	Shepard, F.,	"	"
42153	"	Stark, R.,	"	"
202,193	"	Keats, H.,	"	"
31746	"	Wardlaw, T.,	"	"
35118	"	Wyllie, J.,	"	24-9-18
35105	"	Andrew, W.,	"	25-9-18
201,592	"	Robertson, R.,	"	"
201,205	"	Chapman, R. T.,	Died of wounds or killed in action	25-9-18 or shortly after
35327	"	Wilson, J.,	Killed in action	27-9-18
18254	"	Potter, T.,	"	1-10-18
200,827	"	Hewitson, J.,	"	2-10-18
10287	"	Smith, R.,	"	"
35148	"	Scullion, J.,	"	"
240,303	"	McKnight, R.,	Died of wounds or killed in action	2-10-18 or shortly after
35054	"	Cameron, J.,	Killed in action	3-10-18
201,199	L/Cpl.	Fairbairn, T.,	"	"
201,041	Private	Knox, R.,	"	"
35117	"	McLean, D.,	"	"
35196	"	Boyd, W.,	Died of wounds or killed in action	3-10-18 or shortly after

201,247	Private	Corson, R.,	Died of wounds or killed in action	3-10-18 or shortly after
201,418	"	Scott, T.,	"	"
241,565	"	Hempseed, J.,	"	"
241,508	"	Mathieson, J.,	"	"
201,911	"	Melvin, J.,	"	"
35109	"	Crosbie, J.,	"	"
201,528	"	Richardson, W.,	"	"
35058	"	Sannachan, J.,	Killed in action	3-10-18
42278	"	Hitchen, R.,	Missing. Presumed dead	"
200,061	"	Baillie, G.,	"	"
35224	"	Muir, A.,	"	"
31741	"	Shilton, A. E.,	"	"
201,258	"	Smith, A.,	"	"
201,979	"	Drew, G.,	"	"
35195	"	Duffy, J.,	"	4-10-18
200,416	"	Dawson, W.,	Died of disease	"
200,283	Sgt.	Allan, W.,	Killed in action	"
201,946	Private	Devlin, A.,	"	"
201,425	"	Douglas W.,	"	"
200,967	"	Henderson, W.,	"	"
201,345	"	Mercer, H.,	Died of wounds or killed in action	4-10-18 or shortly after
35232	"	Wallis, W.,	"	"
5805	"	Snaith, J.,	"	"
35098	"	Twiggin, R.,	"	"
35360	"	Kennedy, K.,	"	"
35207	"	Munce, G.,	"	"
31793	"	Dixon, R.,	Died of wounds	5-10-18
30903	"	McKerron, G.,	"	6-10-18
200,340	Sgt.	Crossan, J.,	"	7-10-18
201,341	Private	Thompson, P.,	"	"
241,677	"	Green, J.,	"	8-10-18
31825	"	Hardcastle, A.,	"	22-10-18
200,215	Sgt.	Wood, A.,	Died of disease while a prisoner of war	29-10-18
28061	Private	Harris, —	Died while a prisoner of war (cause not known)	30-10-18
201,035	"	Wilton, D.,	Died of disease	1-11-18
46032	"	Scott, F.,	"	23-11-18
35461	"	Donnelly, C.,	"	3-1-19
31263	"	Robinson, G.,	"	9-1-19
201,497	"	Brown, J.,	Died of wounds	25-9-19
201,237	"	Shiell, W.,	"	9-7-19



The Late COLONEL (TEMP. BRIG.-GEN.) LORD BINNING, C.B., M.V.O.

Part II.

Lothians and Border Horse Record.



OFFICERS OF THE LOTHIANS AND BORDER HORSE.

BACK ROW—Lt. Tulloch, Capt. and Adj. Turner, Maj. and Qr.-M. Stubbs, Lt. J. R. Marshall, Lt. A. R. Balfour, Lt. Bustace.
SECOND ROW—Capt. J. Pringle, Lt. Lord Linlithgow, Lt. T. A. Nelson, Lt. C. Younger, Lt. T. R. Scott, Capt. Steel, Lt. Pkayer (A.V.C.), Maj. Ramsay,
Lt. Lord C. Hope, Capt. Cowan, Lt. Napier.

SITTING—Major Cadell, Major Wauchope, D.S.O., Colonel Lord Binning, Major Burton Stewart, Major Waring.



The Late CAPTAIN T. A. NELSON.

CHAPTER I.

MOBILISATION.

To horse ! to horse ! the sabres gleam,
 High sounds our bugle call ;
 Combined by honour's sacred tie,
 Our word is Laws and Liberty,
 March forward, one and all !

—War Song of the Royal Edinburgh
 Light Dragoons, 1802.

One hundred and ten years after the date famous in the Border counties as the occasion of "the False Alarm" of 1804, the Lothians and Border Horse mobilised on the declaration of war against Germany. Mobilisation took place rapidly and effectively in accordance with the Mobilisation Standing Orders drawn up for such a contingency. Of the four peace establishments of the regiment, "B" and "D" Squadrons, which were recruited from Mid and West Lothian, mobilised at Edinburgh; "A" Squadron, from East Lothian, and Berwickshire, mobilised at Dunbar; and "C" Squadron, representing the shires of Roxburgh and Selkirk, mobilised at Hawick. Most of the men from country districts brought with them their own horses, which were taken over by the Government. But many men, particularly those who came from Edinburgh, had still to be provided with horses, and purchasing officers had already been engaged for a day or two on the formidable task of buying a sufficient number of horses to mount the regiment completely. The feelings with which one and all met the sudden upheaval, and the strange situations which it caused, have been well expressed in verses written by a member of the Regiment.

Tommy once worked in a baker's van,
 And I on a stool in town ;
 I was a sort of city man,
 Tommy a hackney brown.

Tommy and I, Tommy and I, little thought thus to meet
 As we passed each morning when I walked up and he rattled
 down the street.

Tommy is free from the morning rolls
 That weighted his busy cart,
 And I am one of five hundred souls
 Who ride with a single heart :
 Tommy and I, Tommy and I, who could ever have guessed
 We'd find each other good company—good company?—the best.

Tommy no longer must move ahead
 At the bang of a door behind ;
 And I can't snuggle till nine in bed,
 And I'm learning not to mind.
 Tommy and I, Tommy and I, funny are fortune's tricks,
 To kick me out of a crowded tent to saddle him up at six ! *

For two days the issue of saddlery and equipment, the allocation of newly-bought horses, and the organisation of all detail consequent upon mobilisation went on. Then late on the evening of Friday, 7th August, after almost all officers had gone to bed, it was suddenly discovered that the Scottish Command had reason to fear an immediate landing of German forces on the coast of East Lothian. Colonel Lord Binning at once called a meeting of officers, attended by a quaintly diversified gathering of majors in pyjamas, captains in all-concealing greatcoats, and subalterns in breeches and spurs. Arrangements were made for mounted patrols and a motor-patrol under an officer to start at once to reconnoitre the coast line on which the landing was suspected. Ammunition was issued. And in the grey of early dawn the greater part of the two Edinburgh squadrons paraded mounted and in marching order in Princes Street, and marched to Haddington with all military precautions. Those men who were as yet unmounted were conveyed by motor lorry to Haddington, whose newly-awakened inhabitants learned in one breath of their danger and their deliverance. Their surprise, however, at the first of those "scares," which constant repetition later robbed of the charm of novelty, was as nothing compared with the surprise and

* "Ballads of Field and Billet" by W. Kersley Holmes
 (Gardner, Paisley), 1915.

chagrin of one officer whose absence from the midnight conference had remained unnoticed, and who awoke next morning in his billet to learn that the regiment had meanwhile marched to Haddington to repel a German landing!

“ A ” Squadron had at the same time marched from Dunbar to Haddington, where the whole regiment concentrated. The change from the peace establishment of four squadrons to the war establishment of three was effected by the breaking up of “ C ” Squadron, and the distribution of the officers, horses, and men among the other squadrons in order to bring them up to war strength. The horses were picketed in the Neilson Park, and the men were billeted in a disused distillery. Before very long an outbreak of “ pink-eye ” among the horses led to the transfer of “ A ” Squadron to the grounds of Amisfield, just outside Haddington, where soon afterwards the other two squadrons followed. In September the re-organisation of the regiment for service abroad was carried through by the elimination of the unfit. At the same time the “ second line ” regiment was formed, and commenced its training in Edinburgh, under Lieut.-Col. Lord George Scott. For the remainder of the winter the regiment was quartered at Amisfield, one squadron living in billets in the stables, whilst the remaining squadrons lived under canvas until new huts had been erected, an improvement which was not completed until the end of the year. The inevitable wet weather had meanwhile reduced the horse-lines—and indeed the whole park—to an indescribable mass of mud. Training proceeded rapidly. But, in common with most other units, the regiment’s memory of the first winter of war will always be a recollection of vigorous training carried on in spite of a constant struggle against adverse conditions, and varied by a succession of alarms of enemy landings; a memory of mud and troop-training, musketry and roadside control-posts, a midnight stampede of horses, and constant issues and recall of ammunition, coupled with ominous announcements that “ all men are confined to camp to-night because there’s a ‘ scare ’ on.”

The alarm which had brought the regiment to Haddington proved false. But the fear of invasion remained constant. Soon after its arrival the regiment was sent to the battlefield of Prestonpans to dig a system of trenches which was designed as an outlying defence for Edinburgh. And similar work was carried out at Belhaven sands, where any hostile landing on the coast of East Lothian was most likely to take place. At the same time the troops responsible for coast defence had to be prepared for landings anywhere. This led to the rehearsal of a variety of schemes, carried out in conjunction with the 10th Royal Scots and artillery of the Lowland Brigade R.F.A., intended to make all ranks familiar with the lie of the land and with the part which they might be called upon to play. The possibility of their actual fulfilment gave these schemes a reality lacking in peace time manœuvres, and they became doubly interesting when compared with similar schemes drawn up for the East Lothian Yeomanry and the local Volunteers during Napoleon's threat of invasion in 1803.

At the beginning of May, 1915, the regiment moved down to Hedderwick, near Dunbar, and went into camp on the race course, where the annual training had taken place in previous years. Training went on with renewed enthusiasm amid conditions which were ideal when contrasted with the mid-winter gloom of Amisfield. Inspections by Generals of various degrees became more and more frequent. Towards the end of July a telegram was received that the regiment was to be armed forthwith with the cavalry sword. Finally it was announced that the regiment would proceed abroad as divisional cavalry with three divisions of the New Army. The delight with which all ranks hailed the fact that the regiment could at last be spared from coast defence, and had been selected for service abroad, and that it would serve mounted, concealed a very real feeling of regret that, in fulfilling the role of divisional cavalry for which it had been selected, the regiment would necessarily be split up into its three component squadrons. And joy at the prospect of going

abroad was tempered by regret at the thought that active service would involve the breaking up of the regiment as a single unit under the command of "The Colonel."

At the end of July, 1915, the three squadrons left Scotland to join their divisions. "A" Squadron was sent to Salisbury Plain to join the 26th Division. "B" and "D" Squadrons entrained for Aldershot, where they remained in camp together—although training separately with their respective divisions—until "D" Squadron left on 5th September to embark for France with the 22nd Division. "B" Squadron and Regimental Headquarters, with the Machine Gun Section, followed later with the 25th Division.

CHAPTER II.

“ A ” SQUADRON.

On September 21st, 1915, “ A ” Squadron, under the command of Major W. Waring, M.P., embarked at Southampton, and crossed to France as divisional cavalry to the 26th Division, which was commanded by Major-General Mackenzie-Kennedy. The other officers of the Squadron were Captain S. S. Steel, and Lieutenants T. A. G. Tulloh, Lord Charles Hope, T. Robson Scott, and F. R. Eustace. At that time the British front had recently been extended so as to include an area south of the river Somme. This area was taken over by the XII. Corps, of which the 27th and 22nd Divisions formed part, and took over the front line trenches from the French, the 26th Division remaining in Corps reserve. The Squadron, therefore, after detraining at Longeau, near Amiens, for some weeks moved from place to place in reserve during the later stages of the Battle of Loos.

Rumours which had begun to fly about concerning the dispatch of a British Force to Serbia were confirmed by the receipt of orders to re-entrain for Marseilles, where the Squadron arrived on 28th October. Marseilles, until then merely the base of the Indian Corps, had at a moment's notice been transformed into the port of embarkation of a new Expeditionary Force as well as a Base, and chaos held undisputed sway. Units of every kind were inextricably mingled at the Borely Racecourse in a camp where the mud rivalled and surpassed that of Amisfield. Ordnance and equipment designed for Indian troops had to be adapted to the needs of all and sundry, and information as to probable dates of embarkation was unobtainable—if existent. In the beginning of December the Squadron embarked for a destination unknown, and by reason of an outbreak of septic-pneumonia among the horses, was enabled (unlike “ D ” Squadron) to land without the usual delay on arrival at Salonika.

The retreat of the 10th Division and the French forces from Doiran to Salonika had just taken place, after their ineffectual attempt to relieve the retreating Serbian

Army, and during the remainder of the winter the newly arrived divisions were employed in digging the "entrenched camp of Salonika" on the northern slopes on the range of hills immediately behind the town. The Bulgarians had halted some 30 miles north, on the Greek frontier, which they in their turn set themselves to fortify. But for some time considerable apprehension existed in the minds of the staff and of everyone else lest the Bulgarian advance on Salonika should be resumed before the completion of the necessary defences. The Squadron at once moved out in advance of the area of defences held by the 26th Division, and by Christmas, 1915, was on outpost duty at Langaza. Two troops were dispatched under Captain Steel to act as divisional cavalry to the 10th Division, which held the line of defence on the right of the 26th Division.

During the spring and summer of 1916 the Squadron continued its outpost duties, in addition to undertaking reconnaissance of the unknown country which lay between the British defences and the Bulgarian lines. It also found itself called upon to perform many of the "odd jobs" which invariably devolve upon divisional troops. Thus, for instance, during July, 1916, orders were received to detail a party to proceed to Likovan and bring in prisoners and cattle. A sergeant and ten men were dispatched for the purpose. In due course the sergeant reported that there were forty prisoners and two thousand animals, ranging from pigs to water buffaloes. So a further ten men under an officer had to be sent to perform the double office of escort and assistant cattle-drovers. On another occasion it was rumoured that a large number of rifles were stored in a village named Suho, some distance away, in the mountains between Langaza Lake and the Struma Valley. As it was part of the duties of the Squadron to collect arms from the population, of whom a large portion were pure Turks, the Squadron leader and a small party rode to the village and surrounded a suspected house. It was found to contain some hundreds of pistols and swords, elaborately ornamented and of antique pattern, and obviously quite

unsuited for modern warfare. The load was far beyond the capabilities of the pack mules which had been brought as transport. The party, therefore, returned and reported the result of the investigation. The discovery of so large a quantity of arms amongst so heterogeneous a population caused considerable uneasiness of mind to those in authority. Instructions were accordingly given that all the arms must be brought away from Suho and carefully guarded. The following day two waggons were sent to Suho—the first wheeled vehicles that in the history of Macedonia had ever achieved the journey—and the pistols and swords were brought in safety to the Squadron lines. Subsequent investigation by experts in the language and history of the country revealed the fact that the house surrounded had been the local police station, and that these weapons had been there under guard since the disarming of the population during the Balkan War of 1912.

In the months of July and August, 1916, a general advance of the British and French forces, begun during the spring and early summer, was completed, and positions were taken up which were thereafter maintained with little change until the final advance which ended the campaign in the autumn of 1918. In August, "A" Squadron was transferred from the 26th Division to the Struma front, where—together with "D" Squadron, which was similarly transferred—it formed part of a Composite Regiment with the Derby Yeomanry in the 7th Mounted Brigade. The opposing forces had not yet settled down into trench warfare, and many villages on the wide valley of the Struma were still in dispute. And during this period both Squadrons crossed the river on rafts, and took part, dismounted, in raids upon various villages, notably in those in which the villages of Ano (Upper) and Kato (Lower) Gudeli were captured and set on fire.

After this visit to the Struma—a visit which will long be remembered for the grapes and melons and fruit of every kind which grew in profusion about the evacuated villages—"A" Squadron, in October, 1916, regained the



The Late CAPTAIN C. F. YOUNGER.

26th Division, which had meanwhile been sent to the Doiran front. Here the Squadron was made responsible for the defence of a sector of the front line extending from the vicinity of Doiran Station to the village of Surlovo. And, with certain interruptions, the Squadron remained in this area from the end of 1916 until the final advance in September, 1918. Soon after its arrival the Squadron undertook to remove from Doiran Station two railway trucks which had been abandoned during the retreat. The railway line was repaired in seven places, and a bridge 30 feet long and 30 feet high was constructed over the Gol Ajak stream out of railway sleepers, rails, and wire. Under cover of a screen of poplar trees work was carried on in daylight, but with such precaution that the Bulgarians, distant only about a thousand yards, had no suspicion of what was happening until the job had been completed and the railway waggons recovered, much to the satisfaction of the Divisional and Corps Commanders.

During the last months of 1916 the political situation in Greece was such as to give rise to great anxiety. King Constantine had not yet been deposed from the throne of Greece, and there was a very real danger that he might openly avow the German cause, and treacherously bring the Greek army in to attack the Allied forces in Macedonia from the flank and rear. In order to guard against possible surprise in such an event, it was found necessary to send a brigade of the 60th Division to Ekaterini, seven days' march away, on the seashore beneath the slopes of Mount Olympus. On the 7th of December, 1916, "A" Squadron received orders to join this brigade at Salonika. The infantry of the brigade had meanwhile been sent to their destination by sea. On arrival with their new formation the Squadron was given a half-a-day's rest and then sent off in charge of a column of 1700 men and 2000 mules and horses, composing the transport animals of the brigade. The Division had but newly arrived in the country, and had just been equipped for the first time with pack transport, a method of transport whose intricacies and mysteries the transport drivers had

as yet had no opportunities of mastering. A distinctly heterogeneous force was collected by one o'clock in the morning and marched off in good moonlight, resting the following day.

The next evening it started again, and by 9 o'clock came on an area of tremendous floods, which had inundated the low-lying country near the mouths of the Vardar River. The whole country was a vast lake, with a few trees and houses sticking up here and there to show that it was not the sea. Through this ran the so-called road on a raised embankment of three feet, the road itself being submerged by water. A series of partially submerged bridges served to indicate the course of the road through the flooded area, which extended for $1\frac{1}{2}$ miles. As it was important to arrive at Ekaterini in time to oppose the King of the Greeks, who was said at that time to be marching from Larissa to attack the Allied armies, it was decided to push across in spite of the floods. The mounted troops got over without difficulty. But after another three miles marching, the column came upon another flood two miles wide, in which the bridges showed from their position that the road was winding. Rain-clouds made the moonlight fitful and bad. After various attempts to find a way round, a couple of men picked their way across the second flood, and returned to guide the mounted troops over. For hours the Squadron leader watched the units go by. Closed up, the mounted column was three miles long, and the dismounted column another three—six miles in all. It was a strange scene: mules with packs dangling beneath them, horses without riders, men wading without horses. By 5 a.m. the mounted troops were in bivouac. Then the Squadron leader rode back to the assistance of the infantry and pack animals, and found that it had taken from 11 p.m. to 6 a.m. to negotiate the first flood. In daylight a better way was found for them, and they got into bivouac quite exhausted by 4 p.m. When the final reports came in it was a relief to find that no men, horses, or mules had been lost. The rest of the march was child's play—seven days in all.

In March, 1917, the Squadron returned from Ekaterini to the Doiran front, where it took part in a flank attack on certain villages held by the Bulgars to the east of the lake. On May 7th, 1917, "A" and "D" Squadrons were re-united, formed into the XII. Corps Cavalry Regiment under the command of Major Waring, and attached to the 8th Mounted Brigade, which had assumed responsibility for the line immediately south of Lake Doiran. On the departure of the 8th Mounted Brigade for Palestine in June, 1917, the Regiment once more took over this line. During September and October, however, "A" Squadron was sent up for patrol duty with an Independent Brigade in the Dova Tepe area. In September, 1917, Captain H. S. Stewart, accompanied by Corporal W. Ker, proceeded on patrol several miles in advance of the summer outpost lines on the hills to which the infantry had withdrawn in order to escape malaria. The patrol encountered the enemy, and Capt. Stewart was wounded and his horse shot. Corporal Ker, who dismounted and proceeded towards Captain Stewart in order to extricate him from under his horse, was killed, and Captain Stewart was taken prisoner. Writing from the prison camp at Philippopoli, Captain Stewart remarked in a letter—"Poor Ker met his death whilst performing an act of supreme courage."

In September, 1917, Major Waring was recalled to other duties, and the command of the Corps Cavalry Regiment was taken over by Lieut.-Colonel Browne-Clayton, D.S.O., South Irish Horse. From November, 1917, until July, 1918, the Regiment remained in the Doiran Lake sector, where, together with the XII. Corps Cyclists, it held the line between the right of the 22nd Division at Doiran and the left of the Independent Brigade in the Dova Tepe area. During this period it took part in raids carried out by the Independent Brigade on Brest, Akindzali, and other villages lying to the east of the lake. Attempts were frequently made by escaped Bulgar prisoners of war to slip through the lines. Several of these were captured by the Regiment whilst attempting to do so. With the advent of summer, and the withdrawal

of the infantry from the malarial area, a system of mounted outposts and patrols was substituted for the dismounted outposts of winter.

In July, 1918, the Regiment was withdrawn for a month's intensive training in preparation for the general advance. And on September 18th the Regiment was once more split up, "A" Squadron marching by night to join the 27th Division as divisional cavalry. With that Division the Squadron advanced up the Vardar Valley on September 22nd. The rapid advance of the Greek and Serbian troops across the mountains to the north, however, made further advance up the Vardar Valley unnecessary, and the 27th Division therefore swung eastwards across the river, and so came behind the 26th Division, thus missing the opportunity of coming into touch with the retreating Bulgars. On September 28th the Squadron entered Bulgaria and marched to Strumnitza to act as XVI. Corps Troops. After the Armistice with Bulgaria on 30th September the Squadron was sent up to Berovo and Pehcevo in Serbia, where it relieved the Greek Archipelago Division then engaged in disarming the Bulgar forces, held an outpost line on the Bulgarian frontier until the general situation had begun to clear, and maintained touch between the Greek, Serbian, and British forces scattered by the rapid advance. On its return to Strumnitza on 12th October the Squadron was ordered to rejoin the Regiment and proceeded to Dedeagatch in Bulgaria as escort to the artillery and transport of the 22nd Division, in the concentration of forces which then took place with a view to the invasion of Turkey. On 30th October, 1918, just as the Armistice with Turkey was signed, the Squadron reached Dedeagatch, after having marched almost continuously for over seven weeks, during which it had covered some 600 to 700 miles. After remaining for over a fortnight close to the Turkish frontier, the Squadron began the return march to the Salonika area, which was reached before the end of November. And soon after Christmas, 1919, it accompanied the 27th Division to Batum for duty with the Army of Occupation in Trans-Caucasia.

CHAPTER III.

HEADQUARTERS, "B" SQUADRON AND
MACHINE GUN SECTION.

In the third week in September, 1915, the 25th Division began their move overseas from Aldershot.

The Officers were:—Headquarters—Colonel Lord Binning, C.B., M.V.O.; Major D. A. Wauchope, D.S.O Major and Quarter-Master W. Stubbs, and Captain P. C. Caverhill, R.A.M.C.

The Squadron:—Major Burton Stewart, Captains A. G. Cowan and J. Pringle, Lieutenants T. A. Nelson and C. Younger, and 2nd Lieutenant Napier.

Machine Gun Section:—Second-Lieutenant Haldane.

"B" Squadron with Headquarters and Machine Gun Section embarked from Southampton on the 27th September and arrived at Havre the following morning. They entrained from Havre that afternoon, and then started what appeared to be an interminable tour round the North of France. At some station late the following evening a chit was handed to the C.O. conveying orders to detrain at Steenbecque and march to a farm, Steam-mill, one mile south-west of Bailleul, which, with other farms if necessary, was to be taken as billets. Then there was much searching of maps, for the country, which became so familiar later, was entirely unknown to anyone. The first detraining in France at 11 p.m. on the 29th was rather a nightmare. In torrents of rain, and pitch darkness, the 18 kilometer march through Hazebrouck and Merris was only made interesting by its complete strangeness, the utterly deserted road, and the fact that we could see and hear that "there was a war on." Just at dawn the appointed destination was reached. The interpreter, picked up at Havre, distinguished himself by knocking at the farm and demanding "Ou est le Maire." (The Maire was probably in bed at Bailleul, and the farm outwith his

jurisdiction.) Other steps were taken to induce the owner to believe that we had orders to billet there, and not at all the other places which he declared were much more convenient for us and for himself. There was nothing like room for all at Steam-mill. The Squadron billeted there for the time, and Headquarters and the Machine Gun Section established themselves not far from the Bailleul Station. Next day was spent in settling down and spreading out as much as our experience permitted. Two more farms were occupied, and the horses and men were made fairly comfortable. By degrees we located ourselves. We knew we were in the 25th Division, commanded by Major-General Beauchamp Doran. We found we were in the II. Corps, commanded by Sir Charles Ferguson, and in the Second Army, commanded by General Plumer. The front now taken over by the Division was from the Lys, near Armentières, to St Yves, and included the well-known Ploegsteert Wood, of evil odour at that time. We had to make ourselves familiar with all the approaches not to our front only, but also from any part of our area to the parts of the line occupied by the neighbouring Divisions on our right and left. On the 5th October Headquarters removed to Nieppe. A first experience of the trenches was gained on the 10th October and following days, when two troops at a time joined the 74th and 75th Brigades in Ploegsteert Wood, and half the Machine Gun Section went to the 74th Brigade. Second Lieutenant Haldane was appointed, on 8th October, A.D.C. to the G.O.C. 3rd Division, and Lieutenant Napier took over the Gun Section.

The work of divisional mounted troops is varied. They have to be kept trained as cavalry. They provide orderlies for Army Corps and Division, and have to be ready to do the thousand and one other things, mounted or unmounted, which may be required of them, and to act as a reserve for the Division. The Police for road control, and in this area for prevention of espionage, always made a heavy call, and some 30 men under Captain Pringle were generally thus employed, with their head-

quarters at Romarin. In addition there was continuous instruction in bombing and gassing, the preventive measures for the latter being then only in their infancy. Horses had to be exercised and stances made for them, as the Flanders mud was very deep. Shelter also had to be provided, as the weather was very bad. Material was limited, and the demand of the whole Division very great. Transport was not easily got, and bricks from destroyed houses in Ploegstreet village could only be got with difficulty and at night. The brickfield at Hazebrouck was a great find. The owner sold the bricks with pleasure, and the R.T.O. proved a friend in need. But after a few truck loads were secured, the First Army, in whose area Hazebrouck was, objected. Fortunately, the sergeant in charge of the party was a wily man, and managed to persuade the objecting First Army that any orders concerning him must come through his own C.O., and got another two days at the brickfield, securing nearly all the bricks that were required. To get the things was the order, and it was found that having got the things the authorities were always pleased—if a little surprised—at the initiative and ingenuity shown. And the absence of sickness amongst our horses was a pleasing result.

The Squadron and Machine Gun Section had meanwhile moved to two farms on a road running north-east of Steenwerck Station, which was considerably nearer Nieppe and near the centre of the Division. On the 26th October the whole Squadron was on parade or on duty on the ground and at Bailleul in connection with the visit of His Majesty King George. Another duty which fell upon the Divisional troops was that of finding observers for the Divisional Intelligence Officer. This work was started on October 26th, and the men engaged on it soon got learned in the various Hun uniforms and the movements of their transport. They also got a good knowledge of the various kinds of missiles hurled across by him. By some good luck these well-chosen observation posts were never struck by direct hits, though later we were not so lucky. This work was very interesting, if strenuous, and subsequently was greatly developed.

Major Burton Stewart at the end of the month was attached to the 75th Infantry Brigade for duty, and Capt. Cowan assumed command of the Squadron. Major Stewart was on 3rd November appointed temporary Lieut.-Colonel commanding the 10th K.O.Y. Battalion. The Machine Gun Section, or part of it, from now to the time the Division left the line, was always lent to one of the Brigades, and it is a pleasure to record that the Brigadier under whom they served every week thought fit to compliment the C.O. on their work in the trenches and their co-operation in raids. On December 6th the Second Army Commander, General Plumer, made a tour of the administrative area of the Division and inspected the horses and lines of the Squadron. He was good enough to be complimentary about the work which had been put in, and incited us to beg, borrow, or (recollection thinks) to steal, but at any rate to get, what we needed. A different kind of visit was paid to the Division by Lieut. Kennerley Rumford, assisted by officers and men of the Artists' Rifles, who enlivened things considerably at two concerts. The general feeling was that Mr Kennerley Rumford never sang better in his life. He certainly never sang to a more appreciative audience. These winter months were not good in Flanders—cold and continuous rain varied with snow. The mud was proverbial and indescribable. On December 13th the following was circulated from Second Army Headquarters:—

“The Army Commander wishes all Commanding Officers, N.C.O.'s, and men to know that he fully realises all the hardships they are undergoing and the difficulties they have to contend with in the present very severe weather. He thoroughly appreciates all the efforts made to mitigate the hardships and discomforts, and to prevent any abnormal amount of sickness, and he is confident that these efforts will be continued through what must be necessarily a very trying period.”

The Hun had left Nieppe alone since our arrival, but in December he now began to amuse himself by shelling that place occasionally. The house next Headquarters Officers' Mess was demolished by some high explosive

shell. In the house on the other side of the mess were at that moment all the N.C.O.'s and men of Headquarters at dinner. However, for us the miss was as good as a hit. The inhabitants of Nieppe soon learned the way to the cellars beneath these houses whenever "les obus" were heard, and the Headquarters went to look to their horses, and by good luck the shells dropped in the neighbouring fields and not on their newly-made canvas shelters. Colonel Lord Binning, who had been in command temporarily of the 62nd Infantry Brigade, on the 19th December was gazetted to the 41st Brigade, and the following is the last Order published to the Regiment he loved so well, and which owed so much to him:—

"The Commanding Officer much regrets that his sudden appointment to command a Brigade, and the short time allowed him to leave before taking it over, prevented him from coming over, as he would have wished, to say good-bye personally to 'B' Squadron. It would have been a proud moment for him if he had been able to command the Regiment in the Field, but circumstances have not permitted it, and after ten years, which, alas! have gone only too quickly, he leaves it in the best of hands. He wishes all ranks every sort of luck and a safe and glorious return home, confident that, whatever may turn up, the Lothians and Border Horse will continue to maintain their splendid traditions, and confirm the high opinions which have been formed of them on all sides since they came out."

Christmas Day and New Year's Day passed with such celebrations as were possible, and the 1915 Christmas dinner gave evidence that Flanders had not, at least at that time, been denuded of all its pigs and poultry. At the end of January, after some four months in the line, the 25th Division was ordered into rest billets, and the Squadron and Machine Gun Section moved to somewhat scattered quarters near Noute Boom. Headquarters moved to Merris. Rest billets do not mean absolute idleness. We had a good deal of training, schools of instruction in the many arts of war, drill manoeuvres, and combined work with Infantry and Cyclists. The

Divisional Headquarters began huge preparations for Divisional manœuvres, which generally did not take place owing to the Division moving before the advertised time. One wonders if the German in his great push adopted the same plans we then prepared.

The Army Commander, General Plumer, again inspected the Division. But it was not all work. Football and cross-country running and other sports were indulged in, and the cross-country team carried off the 4.5 mile cross-country race, open to the Division, very easily; a good performance considering their small numbers; and the success was only gained by pluck and endurance during the race, and good training and preparation before it. A rugby fifteen also defeated the hitherto unbeaten Cheshire Battalion, after a very strenuous game, which indeed was so keen as to be almost a fight.

Some much-needed drafts, to replace casualties and men who had left to take commissions, now began to arrive from the Base, and Major H. F. Caddell joined as second in command on 19th February, 1916. Rumour had been rife as to the movement of the Division. "The Salient" was the most favourite prophecy, probably because the Division always had to be ready to move there at a few hours' notice. However, it turned out that the new area taken over from the French was to be its destination. On the morning of 15th March the two days' trek began in a snow-storm. The snow made going difficult, and Merville was only just cleared at the advertised time. The following day took us through Lillers and Pernes to our destination—Tangry. The late snow-storm and drifts made some of the roads impassable. The following is an Order published on the 12th as a farewell Order from the Corps Commander of the II Corps on the departure of the Division from the Corps:—

"I should like to express my great regret at the severance of our connection, and my sincere congratulations and thanks for all the good work the Division has done during the last month. The Commanders of all

grades, staff, and units have worked most loyally and whole-heartedly. I know they will keep up the reputation that the Division has already made for itself, and I wish the Division the best of luck and success in the future."

We now found ourselves in the XVII Corps, commanded by Sir Julian Byng. The time in Tangry was spent in learning the roads in what was to be our future area, and finding out which roads were suitable for the various kinds of transport. The change to the peaceful hilly and pleasant country and the glorious spring weather and flowers, after the flat, ugly region of Flanders, was thoroughly appreciated. On March 25th a move was made to Averdoingt. While there, and afterwards at Bethonsart, much training in cavalry work was done. The Corps Commander himself superintended a great deal of it, and several times had the whole of the cavalry and cyclists of his Corps out, and the term "G in gap" became familiar. Further, it was arranged that a troop at a time should go to a cavalry regiment at Fillières. A new weapon, the Hotchkiss gun, was issued about this time, and its intricacies and tactical employment had to be studied. At the end of the month the G.O.C. in Chief, Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig, inspected the Division, and the following extract from Orders was the result:—

"The Commanding Officer has been instructed by the G.O.C. in Chief to inform all ranks that he is glad to see such fine men from the Lothians and Borders of Scotland."

Towards the end of April the Division again went into the line, holding the Vimy Ridge towards Arras, and the Divisional mounted troops moved on the 29th to Bethonsart. Cavalry training was carried on with some difficulty, as the Division wanted us repeatedly in the line by night, and the Higher Command wanted us to train every day. Observers were furnished for posts at St Eloi and Neuville St Vaast. At the beginning of May, 1916, the reorganisation of Divisional mounted troops as Corps mounted troops began, and the Lothians and Border Horse joined the V. Corps. Part of

the reorganisation necessitated the abolition of the Machine Gun section. Some of the men were attached to the Machine Gun Corps, others were absorbed in the Squadron. On the 9th the Headquarters of the Squadron marched to Ham-en-Artois, and billeted there. On the following day we marched through country we knew well, to the Headquarters of the 50th Division, at Flectre, and received orders to billet at farms at Godewarsveld. The following letter to the O.C. was received from the G.O.C., 25th Division:—

“Thanks for your letter, which I was very glad to receive. I trust your gallant and smart lads are having a good and restful time, and at the same time putting in useful work. I feel sure that when the time comes for them to show their worth they will be second to none. They are a fine soldierly lot, keen and energetic, and I am sorry to lose them out of the Division. Whilst they were with me I felt that any job I gave them to do they would do well. I was very sorry I did not have the opportunity of seeing them before they went. But will you please convey to all ranks my very high appreciation of them as a squadron, and that I shall always follow their movements and look out for great things for them when they get busy.

“It is kind of you to speak in the appreciative terms which you have used of the 25th Divisional staff, and I shall make it known to all concerned.

“I hope you and all ranks of the Lothians and Border Horse, Headquarters and Squadron, will have the best of luck at all times, and that we may come across you again whilst we are soldiering. I am very sorry to lose you all.”

Two squadrons of the Queen's Own Glasgow Yeomanry joined us, and the three squadrons became the V. Corps Cavalry Regiment. With the cyclists from the 50th and 23rd Divisions and No. 3 Motor Machine Gun Battery, we became the Corps mounted troops, under the command of Lieut.-Colonel D. A. Wauchope, D.S.O., to whom on 24th May passed the command of the

Kemmel defences. A good time was spent at Kemmel in bivouacs. The Squadron was billeted near Westoutre and Headquarters at Locre. Captain Nelson was given command of the Corps Intelligence Observers, who were furnished mostly by the Squadron.

CHAPTER IV.

HEADQUARTERS, "B" SQUADRON AND
MACHINE GUN SECTION.*(CONTINUED.)*

By the middle of April, 1916, the great German attack on Verdun had spent itself. For some months the enemy had been making attacks on the Ypres Salient, which culminated in the onslaught on the Canadians at the beginning of June. As a result, in addition to the V. Corps mounted troops, No. 4 Company Monmouthshire R.E., the 1st Entrenching Battalion, and 1st Battalion Northumberland Fusiliers, were put under O.C. Kemmel defences for tactical purposes. The German attack, however, was eventually defeated, and the ground lost was recovered by Canadian counter-attacks. It was then decided to send the Corps mounted troops to the Second Cavalry Divisional area for a month for training both as a cavalry regiment and in conjunction with the Cyclists and Motor Machine Gun Battery. On the 7th of June a two days' trek began from Westoutre by Hardiforte to Noordpeene for the night, and thence the following day via Watten and Nordausques to Guemy, where we camped. "B" Squadron was attached to the Royal Scots Greys, who readily gave them all sorts of assistance, and lent expert instructors. Indeed, nothing could have been more pleasant and useful than a month's training with the Greys. Great programmes were made out how to put the month to best advantage, and make the regiment ready for the "G. in gap." But after a week was past, the Regiment was ordered back to Westoutre, and left the area on the 25th of May. The Squadron returned to Westoutre. Preparations were now being made for the attack on the Messines Ridge, and every man who was in the area was at once put on to dig, make roads and dumps, and bury cable, and much time was

spent on the Kimmel defences. Our observers, some 28 of them at Siege Farm, were particularly busy at this time, the whole system of observation on the Corps front being reorganised by Captain Nelson.

At 5.30 on the 17th July a high explosive shell struck and set fire to the observers' hut at Siege Farm. Fortunately, only half of the party were in the hut at the time. Trooper Wickham was killed on the spot, and Sergeant Inglis and Lance-Corporal Grieve died of wounds next day, and Lance-Corporal Palfrey in October. Two other men were also wounded. Very brave work was done in getting the wounded from the burning hut, which was kept under heavy shell fire and in which much S.A.A. was exploded. Sergeant Jack and Lance-Corporals Riddell and Young received the Military Medal for gallantry.

Much dissatisfaction had been expressed with the method of carrying the Hotchkiss gun ammunition, and Major-General Sir Philip Chetwode, commanding the Second Cavalry Division, had experiments made as to the best method. At a conference held by General Chetwode, the carrier made by the V. Corps Cavalry, on a plan of Major Caddell's, was adopted as the best for the Army.

On the 29th of July Lieut.-Colonel Connal, of the Queen's Own Glasgow Yeomanry, assumed command of the V. Corps Cavalry Regiment, with such of the Headquarters of that Regiment as had come with him from Egypt.

The first half of August, 1916, was fully occupied by various working parties, on road construction, making ammunition dumps, and constructing dams; and in addition, several reconnaissances were made of the G.H.Q. second line, which ran, roughly, from Neuve Eglise, and connected up with Kimmel defences. By this time the Battle of the Somme had started, and it had been open knowledge for some days that the regiment was to march south to take its place in the Fifth Army, which was sometimes described as the "Army of Manœuvre." There was much excitement and speculation as to how the situation would develop, and some people with grey horses

Some 30 other ranks were detached for duty with the A.P.M., V. Corps, and remained more or less in this capacity until the Squadron left the Corps. The A.P.M., V. Corps, was very sorry indeed to lose these men, and said repeatedly that they were the best men he ever had.

October passed very much as September had done, there being the same routine work, interspersed with various working parties at such places as Beaussart and Mailly-Maillet. Towards the middle of the month, preparations were well advanced for the subsequent attack at Beaumont-Hamel, which took place eventually on 13th November. Many parties were detached from the Squadron for duty, escorting prisoners from various Divisional Headquarters to the Corps cages. The main Corps cage was at Forceville, and about 200 prisoners passed through this cage in the first 24 hours after the attack.

Several reconnaissances were now made by the C.O., second in command, and Squadron leaders, from near the front line at Beaumont-Hamel, the "special idea" of "G" V. Corps being that, when the attack on Beaumont-Hamel took place, the V. Corps Cavalry should go through and establish themselves on a line between Pusieux and Miraumont, at a place called Beaugard Dovecote. It was probably fortunate for the Regiment that the "special idea" did not mature. It is questionable whether anyone could ride over this ground even at the present day.

Captain Nelson and Mr Thin rejoined the Squadron for a few days at intervals, but for the most part were very fully employed with their observers, and lived a very hard life. Captain Nelson went forward with the 63rd R.N. Division during their attack on Beaucourt-sur-Ancre, and the information he sent back by carrier-pigeon of the situation at this particular part of the front was the first to reach Corps Headquarters. At the end of November the Regiment moved to Marieux, and went into billets there for the winter.

December passed fairly uneventfully. An officer from 5th Lancers was attached to supervise the Troop and Squadron training. On the 21st December the following

appeared in Orders:—"Military Medal awarded Sergt. Tait, J., L. & B. Squadron, for conspicuous gallantry when attached to 63rd R.N. Division as Dispatch Rider."

January, 1917, was taken up with working parties at various places within the Corps area; and several officers were detached for a course of instruction with regular cavalry regiments, and to attend the 4th Cavalry Divisional School near Le Tréport. It was probably in January or February that the Fifth Army Commander inspected the regiment. As there was deep snow on the ground and very hard frost at the time, liberty of manœuvre was somewhat restricted.

On the 12th of March the regiment—less details to look after horses—marched to Couin dismounted, to be under the orders of 46th Division. On the 13th the march was continued to Bienvillers. The Corps troops relieved the 5th Battalion Leicester Regiment in the line at Hannescamps. It was just at this time that the Germans were retiring from the Hindenburg Line. The Squadron was in the line until the 17th of March. Patrols were sent out nightly. Regimental Headquarters were at Hannescamps, which came in for a good deal of attention from the Germans two or three times a day. On the 17th March, on information that patrols from the Brigade on the right were pushing into Essars, a patrol under Mr Kerr was sent out, and gained touch with the Notts and Derbys in Essarts. A troop with two Hotchkiss guns, and cyclists with two Lewis guns, were sent out in support of Mr Kerr, and joined up with the left of the 6th Notts and Derbys. A patrol sent out to ascertain what the situation was on our left (which was very much in the air), did very good work, made its way to Monchy, and explained the situation to the troops they found there. Parties of Germans were seen hurrying from their dug-outs at Adinfer Wood, about 2000 yards distant. In the evening the mounted troops in the line were relieved by the 1/6th South Staffordshire Regiment, and marched back to Bienvillers, The Squadron found their horses there, and rode back to Marieux, which they reached about 2 a.m. on the 18th.

The following special order was received by O.C. V. Corps Cavalry Regiment:—

COPY OF LETTER FROM G.O.C 46TH DIVISION,
TO 5TH CORPS.

To V. Corps.

I desire to place on record my very great appreciation at the way the Corps mounted troops have carried out their duties when holding the line east of Hannescamps whilst under my command. By energetic patrolling, and reports rendered, they have assisted materially in watching the movements of the enemy on my left, and maintaining touch with the 58th Division.

(Signed) WILLIAM THWAITES,
Major-General Commanding
46th Division.

17th March.

To O.C. Corps Mounted Troops.

The Corps Commander wishes me to say that he has much pleasure in forwarding this letter. The work of the Corps Cavalry Regiment and Cyclists is most creditable to all concerned.

(Signed) G. F. BOYD,
B.G.G.S. V. Corps.

18th March.

On the evening of the 18th, orders were received for a contingent of the Corps Cavalry to report the following day to 7th Divisional Headquarters at Mailly-Maillet. A composite squadron of five troops of the Queen's Own Glasgow Yeomanry and L. & B. Horse, under the command of Major W. Macfarlane of the Queen's Own Glasgow Yeomanry, marched out at 5 a.m. on the 19th. The officers of "B" Squadron were Mr Younger, Mr Kerr, and Mr Mein, who had just come to France from

Salonika. This force received orders at Mailly-Maillet to proceed to St Leger, where they reported to the O.C. 6th North Hants Regiment. The distance from Marieux to St Leger is approximately from 20 to 25 miles. The going was terrible, as the roads were rendered very deep owing to the thaw which had now set in after the severe frost. The village had been demolished, and numerous large craters had been blown in the roads. The horses were taken to the gully south-west of St Leger, and the Squadron "stood to" all night waiting for orders. It was a bitterly cold night, with rain and hail. Three patrols were sent out. A mounted patrol under Mr Mein found Boyelles occupied by our infantry at 6 p.m. A dismounted patrol, at 10.30 p.m., met an enemy patrol, which retired south of Croisilles. And a further dismounted patrol, which went out at 2 a.m., found no signs of the enemy up to the wire in front of Croisilles. At 7 a.m. the composite Squadron, under Major Macfarlane, took part in an attack on Croisilles. A squadron of Jacobs' Horse operated to the west of the village, a frontal attack was made by the 6th North Hants, while the composite squadron advanced to the south-east of Croisilles. The attack was held up by artillery and machine gun fire. A Hotchkiss gun under Mr King, of the Glasgow Yeomanry, was left in position to cover an attempt by Major Macfarlane to work round the enemy's east flank. This attack was also held up by machine gun fire, and a line of skirmishers was established to conform with a line which the Lucknow Brigade was holding. Later in the day the led horses were sent back to St Leger, a small detachment remaining on outpost duty under Mr Mein.

At 12.45 on the 20th Major H. F. Cadell, second in command of the regiment, assumed command of Major Macfarlane's party. At about 3 o'clock the enemy opened heavy shell fire on St Leger, and it was then that Mr Younger and Mr Kerr were wounded, the former succumbing to his wounds the following day. Mr King of the Glasgow Yeomanry had previously been wounded while in charge of the Hotchkiss gun. The casualties, besides those mentioned, were 11 other ranks wounded,

3 other ranks killed; 15 horses killed, and 9 wounded. Mr Mein did very good work at this time in getting the horses removed from the shelled village, and personally going round and shooting those that had been too badly wounded.

On the 21st, Major A. G. Cowan and Mr Smith joined Mr Cadell's party at St Leger. On the 22nd, Mr Thin and Sergeant Watson, both of "B" Squadron, and attached to V. Corps Observers, passed through our lines at St Leger to make a reconnaissance of the position in front. They were unfortunately both taken prisoners, and Sergeant Watson was fatally wounded. Until the 26th, a line of outposts was held by Major Cadell's party together with the 21st Manchester regiment. The troops in the line were increasing in numbers every day, but the difficulty of getting anything moved up, in the way of guns and wheeled transport, was enormous, as the roads were so bad. If the Germans had made a local counter attack during any of these days they would not have met with much opposition, and it was very fortunate that the St Leger valley got off with as little shelling as it did. On the 26th, at 11 p.m., the posts were relieved by the 2/5th City of London Regiment, and on the 27th Major Cadell's party rejoined regimental headquarters at Logeast Wood.

On the 2nd of April, 1917, the Regiment moved back to Mailly-Maillet for a few days' rest, and on the 7th the Regiment moved forward to Bihucourt and went into camp. On the 10th, the Regiment marched to Ervillers and reported to 185th Infantry Brigade. Next day the Regiment marched again to L'Homme Mort, under the orders of the 62nd Division, returning to camp again in the evening. The whole of the 4th Cavalry Division were then "standing to." Flagged-tracks had been prepared up to the line, and everyone thought they were "going through." Indeed, the itinerary eventually was described as—Ervillers-Ecoust and "The Gap." On April 28th, Captain T. A. Nelson's name appeared in the War Diary as "killed in action and struck off the strength." The Squadron had heard previously of Captain Nelson's death,

and those who had been in any way associated with him will never forget the gloom and sorrow which the news of his loss cast over all ranks. At the time of his death he was attached to the Tank Corps as Intelligence Officer, and it was while making a reconnaissance during the battle of Arras that he was killed. There is not an N.C.O. or man who has served with him who does not hold his memory very dear. And his love and admiration towards his men was a joy to all.

Towards the end of April Major Cadell had been evacuated sick. The outlook was rather gloomy. Major Cadell, Captain Nelson, Mr Younger, and Mr Kerr were all casualties, but the Squadron had two excellent subaltern officers in Mr Mein and Mr Smith, and all the N.C.O.'s and men of the Squadron carried on splendidly. During May and June, 1917, the situation had again become one of stalemate. Bullecourt in the Hindenburg line had been attacked several times without success and at enormous cost. One squadron in the composite regiment was always kept "standing to," as the idea still seemed to obtain that a successful attack, followed by a breakthrough, might be made. Working parties in the line at night, digging new trenches near Bullecourt Ecoust, were of frequent occurrence. The following letter was received in this connection:—

To O.C. V. Corps Mounted Troops.

The Corps Commander wishes me to say he is much pleased at the excellent report received from the 62nd Division on the work latterly done by the Cavalry and Cyclists in digging trenches, which reflects great credit on all concerned.

Please communicate these remarks to officers and men.

(Signed) G. F. BOYD,
B.G.G.S. V. Corps.

14/3/17.

Mention must be made of a most successful dinner held on the 4th July at the Town Major's (Captain Pringle's) house at Ablainzeville, when the following

officers were present:—Colonel W. Norman Stewart, D.S.O.; Majors Burton Stewart, Cowan, and Ramsay; Captains Pringle, Robson-Scott, and Brydon; Lieutenants Dunn, Mein, Lindsay, and Smith.

In the beginning of July, 1917, a strong rumour was received that the Regiment was to be dismounted. This rumour seemed about to be verified when the Squadron entrained a lot of its horses at Bapaume to go to Marseilles. Mr Smith, with a party from "B" Squadron, was in charge of the "B" Squadron horses. This party returned in about a fortnight's time, and on the 24th of July, with a few horses and officers' chargers that were left, the whole Regiment moved to G.H.Q. Army Troops area near Hesdin, the Squadron going into billets at Crequy. It was pretty well known now that the Squadron was to be turned into infantry, although until the last moment no official information was vouchsafed on the subject. The billets at Crequy, after life in the forward area, were much appreciated, and before the Squadron was finally disbanded a most successful and enjoyable sports meeting was held, and also a concert in the Crequy school buildings, which many of the natives attended. On the 22nd July, 1917, Major Cowan left the Squadron to report for duty with the P.M. Fourth Army, and on the 23rd the Squadron proceeded to Etaples to the 20th I.B.D., for attachment to the 17th Royal Scots. A note compiled from imperfect records shows that up to this time over 60 N.C.O.'s and men of "B" Squadron had been commissioned from the ranks—a remarkable record in an establishment of 142 of all ranks. The reinforcements which the Squadron received from time to time were of a high order, and in spite of the constant drain for commissions, the excellence and individuality of the N.C.O.'s and all other ranks was maintained to the end.

CHAPTER V.

“ D ” SQUADRON.

After having been reviewed with the 22nd Division at Aldershot both by Lord Kitchener and by His Majesty the King, “ D ” Squadron embarked for France on 6th September, 1915, landed at Havre, and entrained straight for the Somme area. For a short time the Squadron was billeted near Vignacourt, but soon moved with Divisional Headquarters to Gillaucourt, where a series of control posts were established in conjunction with the Surrey Yeomanry of the 27th Division. The Squadron was commanded by Major J. R. Ramsay, with Captain the Marquis of Linlithgow as second-in-command, the other officers being Lieuts. J. R. Marshall, A. R. Balfour, A. K. Graham, and I. M. A. Matheson. Before being ordered to Marseilles at the end of October, the officers and N.C.O.'s of the Squadron were given an opportunity of acquiring a first-hand experience of trench warfare by being attached for a short spell to infantry battalions in the line. A class of instruction for the snipers of the Division was also started by Captain Lord Linlithgow, but the class was abruptly terminated by the transference of Lord Linlithgow to another formation, and by the receipt of orders by the Squadron to entrain for Marseilles. On reaching Marseilles the Squadron spent three weeks in the mud of Borely Camp, patiently awaiting the arrival of a transport. It embarked on 24th November, and learnt with surprise that the transport had, with no less patience, for the last fortnight been awaiting the arrival of its troops. Four days later the transport sailed, and, after a day spent in the harbour of Toulon, steamed into the mists of Salonika harbour on the morning of 8th December.

Owing to the uncertainty of the situation no troops were landed for four days, and the Squadron did not disembark until the night of 11th-12th December,



Mounted patrol near Hamzali, March, 1916.



View in Savjak.



Troop of "D" Squadron at Patares, May, 1916.



The village fountain at Savjak. After the Bulgar descent from Rupel this village was well behind the Bulgar lines till the final advance.

at the very moment when the retreat from Doiran was taking place. After a couple of days' rest for the horses, after their 17 days' voyage, the Squadron was equipped with bivouacs and with transport, and marched to Dautli, in order to take up patrol duties in advance of the entrenched line then being dug around Salonika. During the next three months the country between the Salonika defences and the Bulgar lines at Doiran was constantly patrolled, both for defensive purposes and in order to acquire information likely to be useful in case of an advance. Reports were furnished to the Division on the billeting accommodation in the villages, on the state of the roads and tracks, and on the water supplies, fuel, and flocks available throughout the area, whilst at the same time military proclamations were distributed amongst the inhabitants. In carrying out these duties the Squadron acquired a detailed and thorough knowledge of the area occupied by the British forces. Special reconnaissance detachments, accompanied by General Staff officers, geographical experts, engineers, and artillery officers, were also sent forward, and traversed the country to the very fringe of the enemy zone, penetrating as far as the villages of Poroj and Nikolic, which were later included in the lines entrenched and occupied by the Bulgars.

In the middle of April, 1916, the Squadron received orders to march with a squadron of the Notts Hussars for duty as Army Troops in the Struma Valley, where it camped close to the village of Orljak, in a position of isolation far in advance of any other British troops. From here patrols and reconnaissance parties were sent to Demir-Hissar, Vetrina, and the Rupel Pass, and in fact throughout the Butkova-Seres portion of the Struma Valley, into which the enemy had not as yet descended. The Greek frontier was still occupied by the Greek army, with whom, however, relations were somewhat delicate, since this army a month or two later surrendered Fort Rupel to the Bulgars, and permitted their invasion of the Struma Valley. One day in May it became known to Army Headquarters that the German Consul from the Drama had that morning gone to Seres, in order to engage

Greek workmen for the prosecution of designs which were undoubtedly pro-German and presumably anti-British. It was decided therefore to have him arrested, and "D" Squadron was ordered to perform this task, but to be careful not to get into trouble with the Greek troops. As the Consul was known to be returning from Seres to Drama by a certain train, Lieut. A. R. Balfour, M.C., with one troop was sent to intercept and stop the train after it had left Seres. This he did, and returned that evening with the Consul as prisoner, having effected his purpose in the face of strong opposition and threats of violence from a number of Greek officers and a company of soldiers who happened to be on the train.

Before the end of May the Squadron was recalled from the Struma, and rejoined the 22nd Division, which was then advancing from Salonika to the vicinity of Lake Doiran. Here, together with the 7th Mounted Brigade, it carried out protective duties covering the front of the Division, occupying by day posts of observation on a ridge overlooking the town and lake of Doiran, and by night guarding the roads between the enemy's lines and the position occupied by the Division.

Owing to the sickness prevalent during the first summer in Macedonia, many units were reduced very much below strength. Amongst others, the Derby Yeomanry had suffered severely from the ravages of malaria. Accordingly, in August, 1916, both "A" and "D" Squadrons were sent to the Struma Valley to make up the depleted numbers of the Derby Yeomanry, with whom they formed a composite regiment. As a part of the 7th Mounted Brigade, therefore, "D" Squadron took part in the various operations in which the river was crossed and villages in the occupation of the enemy were raided. At the end of September the composite regiment was broken up, and "D" Squadron recrossed the British area, which had then been extended to the River Vardar, and rejoined the 22nd Division on the left of the British line, where it camped close to the western shores of Lake Ardzan.

Amongst other difficulties incidental to the conduct of war in Macedonia, the strange mixture of races amongst the inhabitants produces a very serious problem. In one place a group of villages will be entirely Turkish. In another, exclusively Greek. In a third, both Greeks and Turks live together in the same village. The next village, perhaps, may be inhabited by Bulgar-speaking inhabitants. All of these are citizens of Greece, but, as may be readily imagined, their sympathies are apt to differ widely. Often some member of the family is actually serving in the Bulgarian or the Turkish army. Consequently espionage is widespread and difficult to suppress. Once the opposing forces had settled down to a warfare of positions, the scope for the use of mounted troops was restricted, and the services of the Squadron were largely utilised in order to establish a system of control posts under the orders of the A.P.M. of the Corps. Posts of N.C.O.'s and men were scattered throughout the Corps area in order to patrol the villages, watching the inhabitants and controlling their movements, so as to lessen the danger of innocent-looking peasants gaining military information and carrying it across the lines to the enemy.

On 26th November, 1916, one troop was detached and sent to join the Independent Brigade, which was then taking over the Dova Tepe area, hitherto held by an Italian Division. This troop provided orderlies and dispatch riders, and also furnished mounted patrols, which took part in the operations conducted by the Brigade against the village of Akindzali. Later it was attached to the 60th Division when that Division arrived from France and relieved the Independent Brigade.

Meanwhile, in the beginning of December, 1916, "D" Squadron once more left the 22nd Division and came under the orders of the 8th Mounted Brigade, which was then responsible for a portion of the front line immediately south of Lake Doiran. During its tenure of this area, in addition to the usual duties of defence, the Brigade carried out a complete reorganisation and renewal of the defensive works of the sector, and also took part in several raids.

on villages within the Bulgar outpost line. On the departure of the 8th Mounted Brigade for Palestine in May, 1917, "A" and "D" Squadrons, which had now been united as the XII. Corps Cavalry Regiment, took over the defence of the sector previously held by the whole Brigade.

At the beginning of June, however, "D" Squadron was sent eastwards to the Dova Tepe sector, in order to provide outposts for the forward area, on the withdrawal of the infantry from the low-lying mosquito-infested "winter-line" to the "summer line" on the hills. Mounted posts were established by night, whilst during the day the whole area was searched by patrols and watched by observation posts from suitable points. During July "D" Squadron was withdrawn, and after a short period of training in August, replaced "A" Squadron at Piton Gallieni, south of Lake Doiran. "A" Squadron was then sent to the Dova Tepe sector. For the next year "D" Squadron remained in camp at Piton Gallieni with responsibility for the defence of the Lake Sector, at first under the 22nd Division, but later—on a regrouping of the sectors of defence—as part of the XII. Corps Cavalry Regiment. During this period, each troop of the Squadron in turn was attached to one of the infantry battalions of the 22nd Division, and for a week at a time held a front-line work called Silbury Hill, thereby gaining a valuable insight into the tension and monotony of the role of infantry in trench warfare.

Before the final advance of September, 1918, the Squadron was withdrawn with the Regiment for a short period of intensive training in preparation for the advance. When the offensive took place, "D" Squadron, with Regimental Headquarters, were attached to the 26th Division, and concentrated near Lake Ardzan. On the retreat of the Bulgars, "D" Squadron advanced into Serbia with the Derby Yeomanry by Bogdanci, Cestovo, and Kosturino to Strumitza in Bulgaria. On the retreat of the Bulgars, officers' patrols advanced in front of the Division, and joined the Derby Yeomanry at Cestovo, where skirmishing with the retreating enemy first took

place on the Kosturino Ridge. Early on the following morning the Regiment advanced in support of the Derby Yeomanry, and shared with them the honour of being the first Allied troops to enter Bulgaria. Beyond the frontier village of Kosturino, the road to Strumitza was found to be blocked by enemy machine guns. The advance of the 14th Greek Division on the left flank having been delayed, it was found impossible to force the pass with mounted troops alone, and they were accordingly withdrawn at night behind the infantry outpost line. During the night the enemy continued his retreat, and on the 26th the Derby Yeomanry, with the L. & B. Horse in close support, continued their advance on Strumitza, where touch with the enemy was once more gained among the villages on the northern side of the wide valley of the Strumitza. A large column of the enemy could be seen winding along the road which ascended the mountains across the valley, but in the absence of artillery support it was impossible with a composite mounted force of four weak squadrons to attack the retreating column, protected as it was by a chain of villages strongly held by machine guns and mountain guns. And dusk removed any further opportunity of completing the havoc wrought among the column by the bombs of the Royal Flying Corps.

Early on 29th September one troop, under Lieut. Dunlop, M.C., moved as advance guard to the 79th Infantry Brigade, when the advance towards Berovo was resumed along the mountain road. The progress of the troop was soon checked by heavy rifle and machine gun fire. The troop Hotchkiss gun was brought into action with good effect, first against a Bulgar rear-guard, and afterwards, by a quick change of position, against an enemy mountain gun, by which they had begun to be heavily shelled. By this manœuvre the enemy was forced to retire. Mr Dunlop, who had been wounded by shell fire, was subsequently highly complimented by the Divisional Commander on the good work of his troop, which remained until nightfall in advance of the Brigade.

Next day hostilities ceased in consequence of the signature of the Armistice with Bulgaria. The Regiment was re-united, and started on its long march through the Rupel Pass and the Struma valley by way of Kavalla, to take its part in the concentration on the Turkish frontier at Dedeagatch. Almost at once, however, two troops of "D" Squadron were detached and sent with the 26th Division to Sofia, thence to Rustchuk on the Danube, and ultimately to Varna on the Black Sea. And before the Regiment had left the Struma valley the remaining two troops of "D" Squadron were ordered to rejoin the 27th Division, which was marching to Adrianople. After the Armistice with Turkey had been concluded, however, on 31st October, 1918, these two troops were withdrawn and brought back to the neighbourhood of Salonika, and were eventually sent with the remainder of the Regiment for duty with the Army of Occupation in Trans-Caucasia.

CHAPTER VI.

CASUALTIES, HONOURS AND AWARDS.

At the beginning of January, 1919, after its return from the Turkish frontier at Dedeagatch, the Regiment—less the two troops with the 26th Division in Bulgaria—embarked at Salonika for Batum, being much reduced in strength owing to the ravages of an epidemic of influenza. On arriving at Batum the Regiment disembarked, and after a few days' rest proceeded by train to Tiflis, taking up quarters—after a thorough cleansing of the Augean stables—in the Cavalry Barracks before the end of the month. On 3rd February a detachment under Captain Tulloh was sent to Kars, for duty in maintaining order there and at Erzeroum; and on 20th February another detachment under Captain Clappé was sent for similar duty to Akhaltsikh. In both places the confused medley of races which compose the population—Greeks, Turks, Tartars, Armenians, Kurds, and Georgians—made this a matter of considerable difficulty, and at times it was found necessary to resort to force in order to restore order. Officers and men were meanwhile being gradually sent home for demobilisation. Finally, after four months' duty as Troops of Occupation, the Cadre of the regiment under Major Stericker (Scottish Horse) returned home, and arrived in Edinburgh on 2nd July, 1919. Next day, together with the 1st Batt. Royal Scots, the Regiment marched through the streets of Edinburgh to the City Chambers in order to receive the official welcome of the City of Edinburgh. The colours of the Regiment were crowned with a laurel wreath, and then borne through the city to the Drill Hall in Forrest Road, where both units were entertained to lunch. And after five years of mobilised service, all but one month, the remainder of the Regiment was at length disembodied, in order to await re-creation in the new Territorial Force.

The compilation of a list of casualties and of honours and awards won by members of the Regiment has been rendered difficult by the inaccessibility of the necessary records. In addition to this, exceptionally large numbers of N.C.O.'s and men have been granted commissions in all branches of the service. So far as can be ascertained at present, 224 commissions were granted during the war to members of the Regiment. Many others also were transferred to infantry regiments in France after "B" Squadron was dismantled.

It has been quite impossible to trace the records of those who were commissioned, and of those who were transferred to other units. Many are known to have been killed in action with the regiments in which they were serving. Many more gained distinctions of every kind. But to name any without naming all would be invidious, and it is therefore with regret that the list which follows has been restricted to Officers, N.C.O.'s, and men serving with the Regiment abroad, attached to the Regiment, or seconded from it for service with other units. An exception has been made in the case of Sergeant J. B. Daykins, V.C., M.M. Sergeant Daykins enlisted in the Regiment on 13th September, 1914, and went overseas as a private in "A" Squadron. From there he was sent home in order to qualify himself for commissioned rank. For medical reasons his commission was refused. He was then posted to the 4th Reserve Regiment of Cavalry at Aldershot. From there he was eventually transferred to the 2/4th Battalion of the York and Lancaster Regiment (T.F.), in which he was serving as a sergeant at the time of the operations during which he won the Victoria Cross. A special Order, issued by Major-General Sir R. D. Whigham, K.C.B., D.S.O., Commanding the 62nd (West Riding) Division, describes the circumstances in consequence of which the award was made:—

December 26th, 1918.

During the operations at Solesmes on 20th October, 1918, this N.C.O. displayed the greatest dash, initiative, and gallantry. He had command of No. 7



French, Greek, and British sentries on bridge over river Struma,
near Orljak, April, 1916.



Mounted patrol in Yenikeui, Struma Valley, April, 1916.

Platoon, and led 12 men of this platoon—all that remained with him—up the main street towards the church, and met with heavy opposition. By the skilful way in which he picked his way he was able to work along, and about half-way up the street he shot a machine gunner just about to open fire on the party, and the gun was rushed. The Sergeant and his party carried on up the street, and when about 50 yards from the church the opposition became very strong, heavy machine gun fire being opened and bombs thrown at the party, which by this time was surrounded, the enemy coming out of the cellars behind. Hand-to-hand fighting ensued, in which the Sergeant accounted for 7 of the enemy. The enemy at last ran away, and the Sergeant led his men to their objective, where a strong point was formed. Up to this time the party had captured 30 prisoners and killed about 25 of the enemy, wounding many more. They had been isolated in the town about half-an-hour.

From one of the prisoners Sergeant Daykins learned the position of a machine-gun which was holding up another portion of his Company, and although other men left with him wanted to accompany him, he refused to take them owing to the necessity of still maintaining the important post already established, and to prevent the large numbers of prisoners from escaping and again taking part in the action.

In spite of heavy machine-gun fire he worked his way to the post alone, and shortly afterwards returned, driving 25 of the enemy in front of him and carrying a captured machine-gun, which he mounted at his post. This action of Sergeant Daykins, although it appeared, owing to the previous opposition, almost certain death, undoubtedly saved many casualties to the remainder of his Company, and enabled the village to be carried at an early hour of the operations.

His magnificent fighting spirit and example inspired his men, who would follow him anywhere. He was the outstanding figure in the success of the attack.

(Signed) HAROLD F. LEA,
A.A. & Q.M.G., 62nd (West
Riding) Division.

Exceptions have also been made in the case of Sergt. T. M. Skirving, who died in Edinburgh whilst on short leave from Salonika, and in the case of Col. (Temp. Brig. Gen.) Lord Binning, C.B., M.V.O.

By the death of Lord Binning, which took place on 12th January, 1917, during a visit to Tynninghame, East Lothian, the Regiment suffered an irreparable loss. Lord Binning's previous experience of active service in the Egyptian campaign of 1882, the Sudan Expedition of 1884, and the Hazara campaign of 1888, proved of inestimable value when the Regiment came to undertake its war training. The four years which he had spent in command of the Royal Horse Guards, from 1899 to 1903, made him an ideal Colonel of a yeomanry regiment. It was in 1905, a couple of years before the institution of the Territorial Force, that Lord Binning took command of the Regiment. Just as he was on the point of retiring in 1914, after the last possible extension, the great war broke out, and his period of command received a new lease of life. By the fact that the Regiment was split up and sent overseas as three divisional squadrons, Lord Binning was denied the privilege of commanding in the field the Regiment which during so many years he had trained. In going to France with Regimental Headquarters and "B" Squadron, it was felt that his ability and experience were wasted in command of what was little more than one squadron. But although the regret which he expressed in leaving the Regiment was shared by every member of it, none could deny the right of the War Office to make use of his services in the more suitable rank of Brigadier-General. What he had done for the Regiment during the ten years which he commanded it, only those who have served under him can realise. With the professional skill of

the regular officer, he combined the tact and charm of manner, the knowledge of men and the power of arousing enthusiasm, which are especially necessary for the successful command of a regiment like the Lothians and Border Horse. By his death the nation lost an able soldier, and the Regiment a keen and devoted commander.

It would be impossible in less than a volume to describe adequately the many qualities with which he was endowed. But a brief tribute is contained in a letter written to the "Times" by an old comrade. "He was not only a man of extreme brilliancy and charm, but one whose kindness, unselfishness, and devotion to duty commanded the affection and respect of all those who were associated with him. He shone in every way that is most calculated to inspire admiration, for he was a bold and admirable horseman, a fine polo player and cricketer, a clever musician and composer, and the most charming of companions. He was spontaneously witty, and would always lay himself out to please and entertain all those in whose society he found himself. His military career speaks for itself, but it denotes the energy of his character that at the age of sixty he went out to France and took part in some of the most severe fighting of the present campaign. His most remarkable characteristic was his influence over others, for in all his surroundings he unconsciously became the leader, his companions deferring voluntarily to his opinions and views. With all this he was a man of the most extreme modesty and simplicity of character, and his kindness and sympathy to those in trouble, combined with his energy and wisdom in assisting them, can never be forgotten by those who benefited. In the opinion of many he was the most brilliant man of his generation, and had he been ambitious of worldly success, he might have attained any position. During his life he always set the highest example of duty, and he leaves behind him the deepest sorrow in the hearts of many people, and a gap which can never be filled."

The death of 2nd Lieut. C. V. M'G. Watson occurred shortly after he had left the Regiment in order to be attached for duty to the Royal Flying Corps. After

going out on a reconnaissance flight with another officer, he and his pilot failed to return and were posted missing. A few days later the following message in French was dropped in our lines by an enemy aeroplane:—"The English aviator, C. V. M'Gregor (Watson), and his observer were brought down after a combat over our lines. They are buried in a little cemetery near a church. We honour the brave of whatever nation, even though they are our foes."

(Signed) LES BULGARES.

AWARDS.

- Lieut.-Colonel R. C. Browne-Clayton (South Irish Horse), D.S.O.,
Serbian Order of the White Eagle.
- Major S. A. Stericker (Scottish Horse), O.B.E.
- Captain (Temp. Lieut.-Colonel) W. N. Stewart, Distinguished Service
Order.
- „ I. M. A. Matheson, O.B.E., Croix de Guerre and Serbian
Order of the White Eagle.
- „ W. E. S. Napier, Military Cross.
- „ A. R. Balfour, do.
- Lieutenant G. S. Bleck, M.B.E., Portuguese Order of Avis (Military)
3rd class.
- „ W. Stuart, Distinguished Service Order.
- „ G. H. Mills (4th Bn. Royal Scots Fusiliers), Military Cross.
- „ J. J. Dunlop, Military Cross.
- 1718 Sergeant Daykins, J. B., Victoria Cross and Military Medal.
- 120,061 „ Young, A. P. A., Military Medal.
- 120,090 „ Riddell, J., do.
- 120,227 „ Jack, A. G., do.
- 120,013 „ Tait, J., do.
- 120,108 Squadron Sergt.-Major Short, J., Meritorious Service Medal.
- 120,206 Farrier Staff-Sergeant Duff, C., do.
- 120,319 Sergeant Christison, D., do.
- 120,331 „ Scott, R., do.
- 120,029 „ (Acting R.Q.M.S.) Sanderson, W. J., Meritorious Ser-
vice Medal and Greek Military Cross (Class II.)
- 120,396 Private Barr, A. B., Meritorious Service Medal.

MENTIONS IN DISPATCHES.

- Major W. B. Stewart June, 1916
- Captain T. A. Nelson June, 1916, January and May,
1917
- Lieutenant J. H. Brydon June, 1916
- Captain A. R. Balfour, M.C. September, 1916
- „ H. C. Haldane January and December, 1917,
May, 1918
- „ (Temp. Lt.-Col.) W. N. Stewart, D.S.O. May, 1917
- „ (Acting Lt.-Col.) V. A. J. Marquis of Linlithgow, May, 1917
- Lieutenant T. J. D. Reid, May, 1917
- „ J. A. Thin May, 1917
- Captain W. E. S. Napier, M.C. December, 1917
- Lieutenant G. S. Bleck, M.B.E. May, 1918
- „ S. H. Williams May, 1918
- Major (Bt. Lt.-Col.) R. C. Browne-Clayton, D.S.O. (South Irish Horse
and R. of O. 5th Lancers), January, 1919
- Captain R. J. K. Russell January and June, 1919
- Lieutenant J. J. Dunlop, M.C., January and June, 1919
- Lieutenant R. Thornton January and June, 1919
- Major S. A. Stericker (Scottish Horse), O.B.E. June, 1919
- Captain I. M. A. Matheson June, 1919
- Lieutenant A. H. Otto June, 1919
- „ J. E. Mein July, 1919
- Major J. R. Ramsay
- Major A. G. Cowan July, 1919
- 120,263 Squadron Sergt.-Major Goodwin, A. L., September, 1916,
June, 1919
- 120,003 „ Morgan, G. A., June, 1916
- 1 Regtl. Q.M. Sergeant Anderson, D., June, 1916
- 120,046 Corporal Hudson, G. June, 1916
- 1491 L.-Corporal (Act. Cpl.) Jack, A. G., January, 1917
- 120,108 Squadron Sergt.-Major Short, J., January, 1919
- 120,299 Sergeant Lindsay, J. H., June, 1919
- 121,338 Private (Act. Cpl.) Caverhill, F. D., June, 1919
- 120,313 „ „ Hume, J., June, 1919
- 120,175 Sergeant Mayo, J. P., July, 1919

SUMMARY OF AWARDS AND MENTIONS.

Victoria Cross	...	...	...	...	...	...	1
Order of the British Empire	...	...	...	...	...	...	2
Member of the British Empire	...	...	...	...	...	...	1
Distinguished Service Order	...	...	...	...	...	...	2
Military Cross	...	...	...	...	...	...	4
Military Medal	...	...	...	...	...	...	5
Meritorious Service Medal	...	...	...	...	...	...	6
Serbian Order of the White Eagle	...	...	...	...	...	...	2
Portuguese Order of Avis (Military) 3rd Class	...	...	...	...	...	...	1
Croix de Guerre	...	...	...	...	...	...	1
Greek Military Cross (Class II.)	...	...	...	...	...	...	1
Mentions in Despatches—Officers	...	...	...	...	...	...	29
Other Ranks	...	...	...	...	...	...	11
Total	...	...	...	...	...	...	66

THE ROLL OF HONOUR.

KILLED, DIED OF WOUNDS OR DISEASE.

Colonel (Temp. Brig.-Gen.) Lord Binning, C.B., M.V.O.	120,760	S.-Smith Howatson, W.
	1605	Private Hogarth, W.
Captain T. A. Nelson	1460	„ Wickham, J. V.
„ T. P. E. F. Clennel	1480	„ Harvey, C.
„ W. N. Stewart, D.S.O.	1939	„ Smith, J. K.
Lieut. C. F. Younger	1585	„ Pott, J. G.
2nd Lieut. C. V. M'G. Watson	1839	„ Rintoul, R.
„ M. S. Macaulay	120,586	„ Smart, J.
„ R. C. Campbell	1897	„ Old, J. W.
120,040 Sadd.-Sergt. Lawrie, G.	120,768	„ Murphy, J. C.
646 Sergt. Inglis, G.	120,654	„ Laing, W.
120,117 „ Watson, G. P.	120,436	„ Bruce, W. A.
120,124 „ Ronaldson, W. A.	120,607	„ Valentine, G. F.
120,264 „ Skirving, T. M.		„ Spence, R.
120,276 Corpl. Kerr, W.	120,822	„ Lafferty, J.
1680 L.-Corpl. Grieve	120,688	„ Murdoch, J.
1679 „ Palfrey, J.	120,792	„ MacDonald, A.
120,604 „ Reid, D.		

Part III.

History of the Territorial Force
Associations for the Counties
of Roxburgh, Berwick,
and Selkirk.

HISTORY OF THE TERRITORIAL FORCE ASSOCIATIONS OF THE COUNTIES OF ROXBURGH, BERWICK, AND SELKIRK.

Schemes were made by the Army Council for the establishment and constitution of the following Associations:—(1) Territorial Force Association of the County of Roxburgh; (2) Territorial Force Association of the County of Berwick; and (3) Territorial Force Association of the County of Selkirk. That for Roxburgh provided for a president, 7 military members, 2 representative members appointed by the County Council, and 4 co-opted members; that for Berwick, 6 military members, 2 representative members, and 4 co-opted members; and that for Selkirk, 6 military members, 2 representative members, and 3 co-opted members. The members of each Association have always been fairly representative of the military, landed, and industrial interests of the district.

His Grace The Duke of Roxburghe, K.T., M.V.O., is president, and Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith, Bart., of Hendersyde Park, Kelso, is chairman of the Roxburghshire Association. Captain C. B. Balfour is president and chairman of the Berwickshire Association. The Right Hon. Lord Polwarth is president, and Major C. H. Scott Plummer of Sunderland Hall, Selkirk, chairman of the Selkirkshire Association.

The units administered by these Associations at the outbreak of the late war were:—

ROXBURGH.—1 squadron Lothians and Border Horse.
3 companies of the 4th King's Own Scottish Borderers.

BERWICK.—1 squadron Lothians and Border Horse.
2 companies of the 4th King's Own Scottish Borderers.

SELKIRK.—3 companies of the 4th King's Own Scottish Borderers, with the Headquarters of that Regiment.

Lieut.-Colonel Andrew Haddon, O.B.E., Hawick, was appointed Secretary of the three Associations, with offices at 7 Tower Knowe, Hawick, and Mr J. Aikman Smith, C.A., 11 Duke Street, Edinburgh, was appointed auditor.

All the members of each Association were elected to the General Purposes Committee.

It was seen at the very start that the three Associations would be jointly interested in the greater part of the business, and it was obvious that Joint Committees would be required. All the members of each Association were therefore appointed a Joint Committee. Captain C. B. Balfour, of Newton Don, Kelso, then the Chairman, now the President of the Berwickshire Association, was appointed Chairman of the Joint Committee. There was also appointed a Joint Finance and Advisory Committee of nine members, which could be called together at short notice to authorise the payment of accounts or deal with any business requiring immediate attention. There was also a Joint Mobilization Committee appointed to deal with these matters.

Meetings of the Roxburghshire Association have been held at Newtown St Boswells, of the Berwickshire Association at Duns, and of the Selkirkshire Association at Galashiels. The Joint Association meetings have been held in the County Council rooms, Newtown St Boswells, the use of these rooms having been granted by the Roxburghshire County Council, a small rent being charged. In order to comply with the terms of the schemes, it was necessary to hold meetings of each Association in the County Council rooms immediately after the Joint Committee met for the purpose of homologating the resolutions come to at these joint meetings.

Although the business of the Associations was conducted jointly, the schemes, together with War Office instructions, entailed separate books and accounts to be kept for each Association. An Army Book, 89.B., was therefore kept for each Association together with a separate minute book for each, as well as a minute book for the minutes of the Joint Committee. The claims for

annual grants were made up for each Association as well as the financial returns. A separate bank account was kept for each, and the grants for each Association paid into the respective bank accounts, which were drawn upon by cheques signed by appointed members of the respective Associations and the secretary.

The following were the members of each Association prior to the war:—

ROXBURGHSHIRE.—

The Right Hon. Lord Reay, K.T., G.C.S.I.,
G.C.I.E., President.

Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith, Bart.,
Chairman.

His Grace The Duke of Roxburghe, K.T.,
M.V.O., Vice-Chairman.

Lord G. W. Montagu Douglas Scott.

Provost J. S. Boyd.

Captain Mark Sprot.

Major C. W. Anderson.

Major A. M. Small.

Major A. Stevenson.

Major W. A. Innes.

Major T. D. Crichton Smith.

Arm.-Sgt. J. H. Scott.

Provost Melrose.

A. B. Patrick, Esq.

BERWICKSHIRE.—

Captain C. B. Balfour, Chairman.

Colonel Lord Binning, M.V.O., President.

Major J. Hunter, Vice-Chairman.

Lieut.-Colonel D. W. Milne Home.

Captain A. N. McDougal.

Major James Greig.

Colonel C. Hope.

Major R. H. Shaw.

Provost J. Ford.

Colonel W. M. Threipland.

Major Sinclair Wemyss.

Captain Fulton.

SELKIRKSHIRE.—

The Right Hon. Lord Polwarth, President.
 Major C. H. Scott Plummer, Chairman.
 The Earl of Dalkeith (now His Grace The Duke
 of Buccleuch), Vice-Chairman.
 Major D. C. Alexander.
 Major W. Dunlop.
 John Scott, Esq.
 John C. Scott, Esq.
 Major J. Herbertson.
 Captain J. L. Pringle.
 Lieut. S. Strang Steel.
 Lieut.-Colonel J. McNeile.
 Captain McGregor Jobson.

The following were the members of the Finance and
 Advisory Committee:—

Colonel C. Hope.
 Captain C. B. Balfour.
 Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith, Bart.
 His Grace The Duke of Roxburghe, K.T.,
 M.V.O.
 Major C. H. Scott Plummer.
 Major T. D. Crichton Smith.
 John H. F. K. Scott, Esq.
 John C. Scott, Esq.
 A. B. Patrick, Esq.

Although some of the members were called on and had to leave the country for service abroad, their places were not filled, but when any member was reported killed or presumed to be killed, a substitute was found to fill the vacancy. As a number of the military members were on home service and were able to attend the meetings of the Associations, and in view of the fact that much of the business had devolved upon the Joint Finance and Advisory Committee and a Joint Emergency Committee consisting of the Chairman of each Association with Colonel Hope and Major Dunlop, the work of the Associations was carried on quite satisfactorily. These

committees frequently met in the Secretary's office and took the burden of the great pressure of work entailed at the time of mobilisation.

Another room was fitted up in the Secretary's offices for the accommodation of the staff to be engaged on the separation allowance work, and girls employed to be initiated into that work. The Secretary's staff was added to as it was found necessary to undertake the increased volume of work. The Separation Allowance Department has handled up to 2000 claims. A separate set of books and accounts are kept for this Department, which are audited periodically by auditors from the Scottish Command.

In peace time the Associations had provided suitable drill halls and rifle ranges. The site for a drill hall was purchased at Hawick, and a suitable drill hall erected thereon at a cost of £2750. A building was purchased at Galashiels and alterations and additions made thereon to make it suitable for a drill hall with headquarter offices and stores for the Regiment at a cost of £3115. A building was leased at Melrose and altered to make it suitable for a drill hall. Drill halls and armouries were also acquired on lease at Selkirk and throughout Berwickshire. These drill halls were suitably furnished and gymnastic apparatus obtained for the use of the men, and instructors provided to give instruction. Rifle ranges were either provided or put into proper repair at the various Detachments throughout the three counties. Drill fields were also arranged for the use of the units. The latest web equipment had been provided and all units were suitably clothed. The yeomanry had a suit of walking-out dress and service dress for each man. Walking-out dress had not been provided for the infantry, but two sets of service dress had been supplied for each man. Mobilisation stores had also been provided or a contract made for their supply, so that when the word to mobilise came everything was ready.

The Association undertook the raising and organisation of the National Reserve, and appointed Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith to the command of the Battalion

for Roxburgh and Selkirk, and Colonel Hope to the command of the Battalion for Berwickshire. They also appointed committees throughout the area for the purpose of recruiting and organising. The following were the Chairmen of these Committees:—

ROXBURGH.—

Hawick—Lieut.-Colonel A. Haddon, O.B.E.,
Hawick.

Jedburgh—Major C. W. Anderson, Royal Bank
House, Jedburgh.

Kelso—Major T. D. Crichton Smith, Kelso.

Melrose—Major A. Murison Small, Commercial
Bank Chambers, Melrose.

BERWICK.—

Duns—Captain A. N. McDougal, Market Square,
Duns.

Coldstream and Swinton—Captain Smith,
Orchard House, Coldstream.

Earlston—Colonel C. Hope, of Cowdenknowes,
Earlston.

Lauder—Captain G. L. Broomfield, Lauder.

Greenlaw—Captain J. McDougal, Bassendean,
Gordon.

Chirnside—Mr George Ainslie, The Bridge,
Chirnside.

Ayton—Major T. J. S. Doughty, Ayton.

Eyemouth—Sergt.-Major Peter Edgar, Albert
Road, Eyemouth.

SELKIRK.—

Selkirk—Major D. C. Alexander, Selkirk.

Galashiels—Major W. Dunlop, Lawyer's Brae,
Galashiels.

Many parades took place at the headquarters of detachments, and a shooting competition was organised and held at Melrose for the Roxburgh and Selkirk Battalion, prizes being awarded to the best shooting detachments, and a parade of the Berwickshire Battalion was held at Duns. A register of all men was kept by the chairman

at each detachment Headquarters and by the secretary of the Associations. At the outbreak of war parades of these detachments were held at the Headquarters of each detachment, which were attended by Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith in Roxburgh and Selkirk, and by Colonel Hope in Berwickshire, who read the conditions upon which they could join the army. Many enrolled at once, and others enrolled at subsequent parades. The men were classified into Class I., Class II., and Class III. Class I. had been medically examined as fit for foreign service, and subsequent instructions provided they could only get the bounty if they joined the Regular or New Armies. The bounty for Class I. was £10, and the bounty for Class II. £5. After the outbreak of war A.F. N.R.1 were issued for every man entitled to the bounty who joined the army. The strength of the National Reserve was as follows:—

Roxburghshire	...	...	445
Berwickshire	...	...	410
Selkirkshire	...	...	376

1231

The recruiting under the voluntary system entailed a great amount of work on behalf of the members of the Associations, and each contributed his quota in one way or another. Arrangements were made with the political agents and their committees to assist in this work. Meetings were arranged in all the towns and villages throughout the area administered by the Associations. Local bands were engaged, and the band of the 3rd Battalion K.O.S.B. from Edinburgh was brought out, and played at various centres throughout the area. Speakers were arranged to address the audiences, advertisements were inserted in the local papers, and attractive bills posted at all populous places. Large supplies of circulars and attestation forms, both for the Regular Army and Territorial Force were obtained, and the former freely distributed. Recruiting staffs were organised at every Drill Hall with instructions to recruit every man available either for the Territorial Force or Kitchener's Army, the latter

being the most popular, as it was considered by many that they would be the first to go to the front, which was not the case.

On the passing of the Military Service Act the Chairman, Captain C. B. Balfour, was appointed area representative. Major T. D. Crichton Smith, Major Dunlop (both Members of the Association), and the Secretary were appointed Military Representatives, and subsequently, with the exception of Major T. D. Crichton Smith, National Service representatives, and these gentlemen did a great deal of work in securing men for the army.

When the additional battalions came to be organised much work fell to the Associations, especially in the clothing and equipping of these and in finding the underclothing required, also for the 1/4th K.O.S.B., before proceeding to the front. The Emergency and Finance Committees took this in hand. The contracts with the London clothiers were stopped, as the War Office required these contractors to supply the immediate needs of the army in the south. The Hawick hosiery firms were each visited, and old stocks on their shelves of the very best quality of underclothing purchased. They also arranged with the textile mills in the district to make and supply the necessary khaki cloth, which was made up by tailors and clothiers in Galashiels and Hawick. A manufacturer in Galashiels also undertook to manufacture the glengarry caps, including the diced border, which was done most efficiently, although these articles had not been manufactured in the district before. These arrangements proved most efficient and enabled the Battalions to be clothed with the utmost despatch. Boots were also obtained from supplies in the shops, and the units were clothed and equipped to the entire satisfaction of the Commanding Officers. The accounts, amounting to about £22,000 for all these outlays, were checked and passed by the Finance Committee, paid by the Associations, and debited on an Imprest Account, which was subsequently repaid to the Associations through the Scottish Command, the result being that three Bat-

talions of Infantry and four Squadrons of Yeomanry were recruited, clothed and equipped—the 1/4th K.O.S.B., 2/4th K.O.S.B., 3/4th K.O.S.B., and two squadrons 1st Lothians and Border Horse, one squadron 2/1st Lothians and Border Horse, and one squadron 3/1st Lothians and Border Horse. A depot (first called the Administrative Centre) for the K.O.S.B. Territorials had been established in Galashiels, and another in Wemyss Place, Edinburgh, for the Lothians and Border Horse, to which the Associations sent considerable supplies of clothing, underclothing, and boots, which enabled subsequent drafts of recruits to be fitted out ready to join the reserve unit. In peace time two squadrons of the Yeomanry were administered by Roxburgh and Berwick Associations, the other two squadrons with Headquarters in Edinburgh were administered by the City of Edinburgh. After the outbreak of war the four squadrons were put into three squadrons, and as this entailed a good deal of mixing up of men administered by the different Associations in March, 1917, the payment of the separation and dependents' allowances were taken over by the City of Edinburgh.

The 2/4th K.O.S.B. was billeted in Galashiels, and Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith, as Chairman of the Roxburghshire T.F. Association, did good work in obtaining suitable billets there on reasonable terms, and the rents and claims were settled by the Associations.

As already stated, every facility was given for men to enrol in the Regular or New Armies, and a supply of Attestation Forms for these Armies, as well as the Territorials, were provided at all Recruiting Centres. The Associations also gave the Regular and New Armies billeted in the area the use of the Drill Halls and Rifle Ranges, paying all expense of heating, lighting, and cleaning of the former and all repairs and upkeep of the latter. An important part of the duties of the Association has been the recommendation of gentlemen for commissions throughout the war. A joint Committee was appointed composed of Captain C. B. Balfour, Colonel Hope, and Major Alexander, who have satisfied themselves as to the

qualifications and suitability of each applicant before the President and Secretary of the respective Associations signed the certificate on the Army Form.

At a meeting of the Joint Committee held on 25th October, 1916, the question of raising Volunteers was considered. Colonel The Hon. W. G. Hepburne Scott, who had been asked to attend the meeting, explained what would be required, and it was resolved to raise a Volunteer Battalion from Roxburgh and Selkirk and another Volunteer Battalion from Berwickshire. After the probable number of officers and men had been ascertained it was agreed to request the Lords Lieutenant of these counties to make the necessary offer of service for His Majesty's acceptance, and Committees were appointed to put forward the names of gentlemen for commissions to be recommended by the Lords Lieutenant.

At a subsequent meeting it was reported that the offers of service had been accepted by His Majesty, and the following strength had been enrolled:—

1st Roxburghshire Volunteer Regiment ...	685
1st Berwickshire Volunteer Regiment ...	457
1st Selkirkshire Volunteer Regiment ...	485

The following gentlemen had been nominated for commissions:—

ROXBURGHSHIRE.—

Major A. Stevenson.	Mr Thomas Black.
Major W. A. Innes.	Mr Wr. E. Ballantyne.
Mr M. J. Oliver.	Mr A. Middlemas.
Mr J. B. Hamilton.	Rev. John Laidlaw.
Mr W. Scott Elliot.	Mr John T. C. Hill.
Mr H. S. R. Innes.	Mr Robert E. Boyd.
Mr James Veitch.	

BERWICKSHIRE.—

Captain C. B. Balfour (as County Adjutant).	
Captain A. N. McDougal.	
Mr A. Malcolm.	Mr H. Harvie.
Mr W. E. Kitson.	Mr J. F. Veitch.
Mr G. S. Robertson.	Mr N. P. Durie.

SELKIRKSHIRE.—

Colonel H. S. Murray.	Mr R. S. Sanderson.
Mr D. G. Stalker.	Mr C. Craig-Brown.
Mr John Roberts, jun.	Mr Wm. Rutherford.
Mr J. S. McQueen.	Mr R. Turnbull.
Mr R. H. Dun.	Mr Thomas Dryden.

It was also reported that Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith had been appointed County Commandant for Roxburghshire, and Lieut.-Colonel Murray, County Commandant for Selkirkshire, and that these were to form an Administrative Battalion to be called the Border Rifle Volunteer Battalion, under the command of Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith. Colonel Hope was appointed County Commandant for Berwickshire, and Major J. C. Aitken, Nisbet, Duns, to command the 1st Berwickshire Volunteer Battalion. On 14th August, 1917, Colonel Sir Richard Waldie Griffith having resigned the command and the office of County Commandant in order to take up military duty in France, Lieut.-Colonel Murray was appointed to the Command, and Lieut.-Colonel Stevenson was appointed County Commandant for Roxburghshire. Captain J. M. Dun, 4th K.O.S.B., was appointed Adjutant of the Border Rifles, and Captain A. N. McDougal, Duns, was appointed Adjutant of the 1st Berwickshire Volunteer Regiment. A sum of money was voted for each Commanding Officer to meet his postage and petty outlays, and all the drill halls and rifle ranges belonging to the Associations were put at their disposal for drilling and rifle practice purposes. Additional drill halls at outlying populous centres were also hired for their use. The Royal Army Clothing Department supplied the cloth on Indent, and the Associations arranged contracts for the uniforms to be made up first by a London firm, but latterly by a Galashiels and Hawick firm of clothiers. Equipment as well as arms were obtained by Indent on the Ordnance at Stirling, and the whole Force was suitably clothed and equipped in anticipation of the men becoming efficient. On their being certified as having become efficient a Grant of £2 per man was drawn

by the Associations to meet the cost of clothing and other expenses. After the regiments were armed, clothed and equipped, mobilization stores were indented for on Ordnance and supplied to each Volunteer Battalion. Alternative titles were given by the War Office to these two Volunteer Regiments, that for the Border Rifles to be 1st Vol. Batt. King's Own Scottish Borderers, and that for 1st Berwickshire Volunteer Regiment to be 2nd Vol. Batt. King's Own Scottish Borderers.

Circulars were sent out to owners of heavy motor lorries and others throughout Roxburgh, Berwick, and Selkirk, asking for the use of these to form a Heavy Motor Transport Corps. Although these were readily offered, it was found that Roxburgh was the only county possessing sufficient of the weight required. An offer of service of such a Corps was sent in by the Lord Lieutenant of Roxburgh, which was accepted by His Majesty. The name of Mr J. B. Sime, Brieryhill, Hawick, was sent in for a commission to command the Corps, and he was duly gazetted Lieutenant to the Command. Mr R. W. Michael, Kerchesters, Kelso, was also gazetted a 2nd Lieutenant. The name assigned to this Unit was Roxburghshire A.S.C., M.T. (V.), and it consisted of one heavy section.

A conference was held in London on 23rd April, 1918, with the Under Secretary of State for War in reference to the raising of Special Service Companies for Coast Defence. Lieut.-Colonel Murray, Major Aitken, and the Secretary attended on behalf of the Associations, when it was arranged that these Service Companies should be provided for three months, and the pay, with separation allowances, to be the same as those paid for the Territorial Force. The necessary number of officers and men offered their services and were organised under the 93rd and 94th Companies of the Special Service Volunteers doing duty at Dunbar. The separation and dependents' allowances were assessed by the Secretary and paid to the dependents and wives of these Volunteers. There were 36 had dependents and 35 were married.

At the conclusion of the period the following letter of appreciation was received from the Director General of the Territorial Force:—

WAR OFFICE,
 ADASTRAL HOUSE,
 VICTORIA EMBANKMENT, E.C.4,
 28th September, 1918.

SIR,

With reference to the termination this day of the engagement of the Volunteers who have been serving for three months in the Special Service Companies raised under War Office letter, number as above, of the 1st June last, at the original instance of the Under Secretary of State for War in his appeal at the Conference held at the County Hall, Spring Gardens, London, on the 27th May last, I am directed by the Army Council to convey to you an expression of the keen appreciation which is felt at the patriotic response to that appeal.

It is fully realised that the officers and men concerned, who voluntarily undertook, in nearly all cases at considerable inconvenience to themselves, unaccustomed duties for protracted periods of two or three months, enabled the Government to meet a critical situation, and tide over very difficult days in the history of the war.

I am glad to add that all concerned may congratulate themselves on the fact that up to the limit of their powers they have directly contributed to the improvement of the situation in France, and on more distant fronts. It is a matter of satisfaction to know that members of the Volunteer Force can be relied upon to come forward on the occasion of a crisis such as that which recently occurred, and I am to ask you to convey this expression of thanks to all concerned.

I am, Sir,

Your obedient Servant,

(Sgd.) SCARBOROUGH, Major General,
 Director General,
 Territorial and Volunteer Forces.

Recruiting for the 1st Vol. Bn. K.O.S.B. (Border Rifles) commenced in December, 1916, including both Roxburghshire and Selkirkshire. Captain John M. Dun, 1/4th Bn. K.O.S.B., was appointed Adjutant on 27th April, 1917, and about this time the obligation for a definite number of hours of training to be done each month came into force, and about 75 per cent. of the Battalion signed the necessary form. The permanent staff consisted of R.S.M. W. Balmer (K.O.S.B.), C.S.M. Instructor of Musketry Buchanan (K.O.S.B.), and Reg. Q.M.S. Elliot (H.L.I.).

The total number of all ranks enrolled was 2121. Of this total 546 men joined the Regular Army, about 200 were discharged medically unfit, and 1200 passed the efficiency test, a record which was commented on most favourably by the G.O.C.-in-C., Scottish Command.

The various specialists, signallers, machine gunners, pioneers, etc., were fully trained up to establishment. The Battalion was fully equipped and armed early in 1917, although every man could not be clothed, as the Battalion was always over establishment. On the 11th November, 1918, the total strength was 1044.

Temporary service was performed by men of Jedburgh and Hawick Detachments for about 18 months, manning Hostile Aircraft Observation Posts at Jedburgh, Denholm, Hawick, and Borthwickbrae. This duty was performed from sunset till sunrise during that period.

The Battalion was inspected at various dates by the G.O.C.-in-C., Scottish Command, G.O.C. Special Reserve Brigade, G.O.C. Highland Reserve Brigade, Inspector General of Infantry for Scotland, all of whom expressed their satisfaction as to its efficiency. The official report of the Inspector General of Infantry was:—

REPORT OF I.G. INFANTRY VOLUNTEER UNITS.

1ST BATTALION BORDER RIFLES VOLUNTEER REGIMENT.

TRAINING.—Well trained and as good as any other Volunteer Battalion seen. Both instruction and work thoroughly satisfactory throughout.

DRILL.—Good.

MUSKETRY.—Instruction good, but a little more attention needed to the correction of faults.

BAYONET FIGHTING.—Good.

HOTCHKISS GUNS.—Work smart and instruction good.

REMARKS.—A thoroughly efficient Battalion.

REMARKS BY G.O.C. SPECIAL RESERVE BRIGADE.

A very satisfactory report and reflects great credit on the Commanding Officer and Adjutant.

(Sgd.) C. J. SIMPSON, Lt.-Col.,
Special Reserve Brigade.

Edinburgh, 23/3/18.

Field Marshal French inspected the Battalion at Galashiels in January, 1917, and 600 men of the Battalion took part in the march past before the Duke of Connaught in September, 1917.

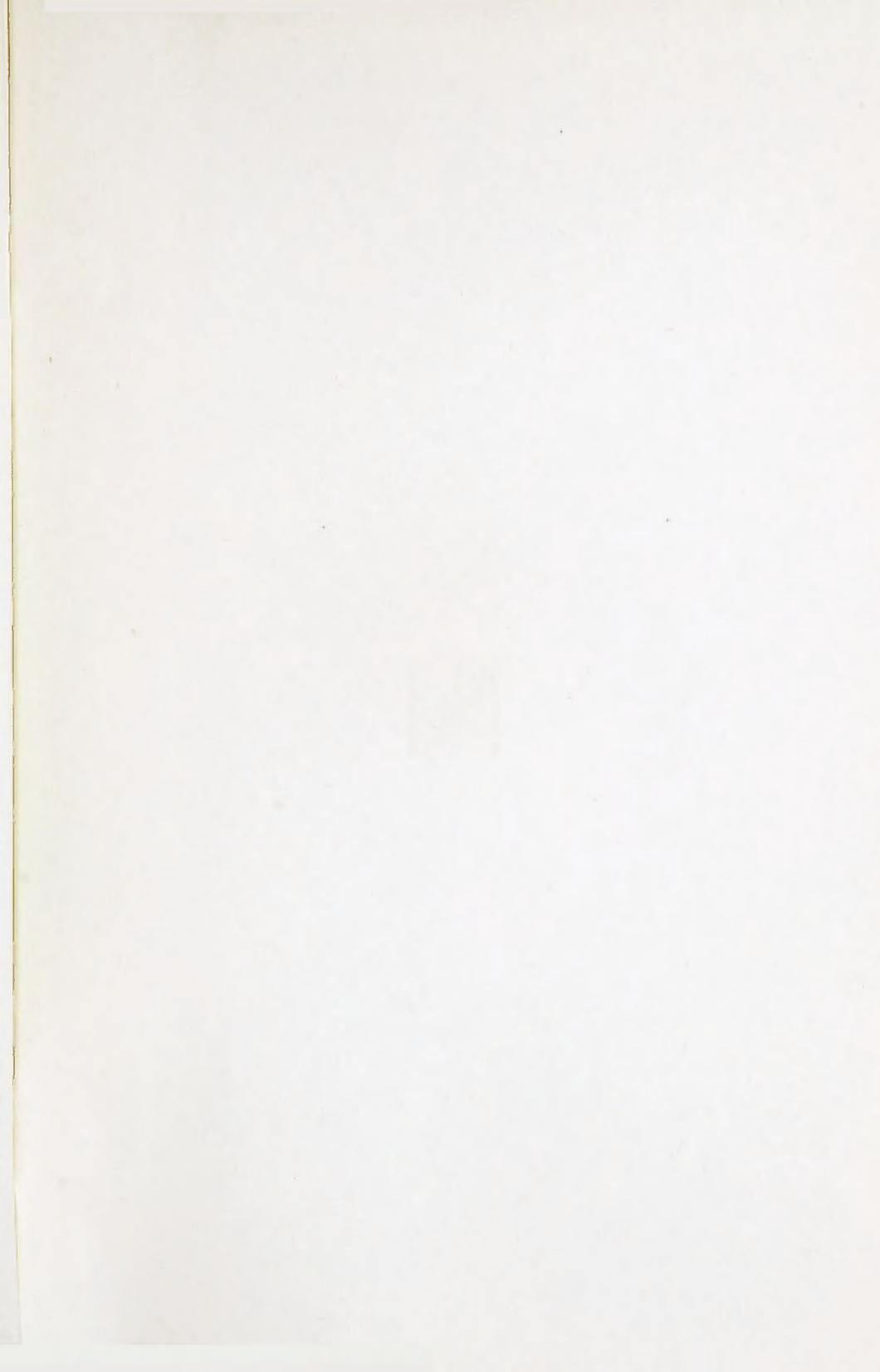
The Duke specially congratulated the County Commandant on the smartness of the Battalion.

About 600 men of the Battalion were under canvas in August and September, 1918, at Hedderwick and Melrose.

When a call was made for Special Service Companies in May, 1918, at a critical period in the war, two officers and 109 men offered their services, though only two officers and 74 men were accepted. These were on duty on the East Coast from 29th June till 29th September, 1918.

The Battalion was one of the most efficient units in Scotland, and was frequently held up to other units as an example of the standard to which Volunteers could be raised.





SPEC COLL s/

D

num

547

457

K47W3





GretagMacbeth™ ColorChecker Color Rendition Chart